

Final Fantasy X-3: Rise of the shadows

By Denyaofdarkness

Submitted: July 24, 2006

Updated: July 24, 2006

Eighteen years after Vegnagun's defeat, an ancient evil has awakened. Yuna's three teenage daughters Simone, Nina and Chelsey are sphere-hunting with their friends trying to find a mysterious sphere to begin a new journey and they finally find one which I

Provided by Fanart Central.

<http://www.fanart-central.net/stories/user/Denyaofdarkness/37398/Final-Fantasy-X-3-Rise-of-shadows>

Chapter 1 - prologue	2
Chapter 2 - chapter one	5
Chapter 3 - chapter two	25
Chapter 4 - chapter three	55
Chapter 5 - chapter four	71
Chapter 6 - chapter five	84
Chapter 7 - chapter six	113
Chapter 8 - epilogue	156

1 - prologue

For many years, people have suffered terrible deaths in our world. Luckily summoners were there to send them.(Now shows top view of farplane)The place where the dead go is the farplane. There is a seal in the sky so the dead can't escape to the Upper world. There is a good part and bad part of the Farplane.(Now camera zooms to a dark hole)Down there is the deepest and darkest part of the Farplane, where those who are bad go...The Underworld

(shows Underworld and a dark figure dragging himself on the ground)

Before, the way to the Underworld has been sealed but Vegnagun tore that hole as well as the holes in the sky.

?????:Yes, the hole! I will escape!

(figure hurls himself for the hole and flies in the farplane sky)

Fayth: Stop him!!!!

?????: You can't stop me now!

(Now figure is flying through the sky and is spat out on the surface)

?????: Yes! I'm free! I will avenge my death and crush Yuna's soul!(picks up a beetle on the ground and crushes it)

1 YEAR LATER

(Guadosalam, 15:53 pm)

Tromell: No, it can't be...

?????: It is me Tromell, men, get rid of this fool!

Tromell: Noooo! please, I'll be your royal servant!

?????: (grabs Tromell by his shirt collar and lifts him up)Really?

Tromell:Yes, I-I'll do anything!

?????: (lowers Tromell down)Fine, then do a fine task for me.

Tromell: sir?

?????: Go find Lady Yuna, try to bring her to me. But first, steal her newborn child. I've heard she had a baby so take it!

Tromell: W-why?

?????: (flings Tromell against wall)Because I said so! Bring my strongest lizard men and maybe some of the guado!

Tromell:Yes sir!

?????: (Walks over to one of his lizard men and takes a baby girl from him then carries her out to the thunder plains and laughs)Soon, together, we will rule all of Spira! And crush Lady Yuna's soul!

Everyone will wonder where their precious high summoner went and she'll be dead! You will understand revenge soon, my lovely Mckelly Guado. (Baby cries and ???? hugs her tight. Then you see the baby's eyepatch)I will get my revenge on you,Yuna.

MEANWHILE IN BESAI

Everyone from the village, even some of Yuna's good friends far from besaid gathered around to see her child. It was a celebration for everyone.

Rikku: Yunie! Yunie! Yunie's a mommy!(jumping up and down excitedly)

Paine: Relax Rikku, Tidus will tell us if it's a girl or boy.

Rikku: Oh, but I really, really want to see it!

(Brother comes over and punches Rikku's arm)

Brother: Keep it down Rikku! Yuna's still you know...

Rikku: Oh...right...that...

(Tidus runs over)

Barkeep: Here comesh Tidush!

(Rikku waves while laughing)

Tidus: Come on guys! It's a girl! You want to meet her?

Rikku: Oui pad!(You bet!)

Paine: Let's go!

(Wakka and Lulu walk over and Wakka has Vidina riding on his shoulders)

Lulu: Try to be quiet okay?

Rikku: Ohhh why?

Wakka: Hey Yuna's quite tired, giving birth is hard work, ya?

Paine: Kay we don't need details. And besides, how would you know what it's like to give birth?

Wakka: (scratches his head nervously then waves)Here she comes!

(Yuna walks over slowly with her baby)

Rikku: Awww! she's sooooo cute!

Paine+Brother: Sshhhhh!

Yuna: (giggles) It's okay, I can't believe I'm a mother now. It feels so...special, like I've changed...

Lulu: You'll feel like that for awhile.

Wakka: Aye. When we first looked at Vidina, it was like we were starting a new life, ya?

Tidus: I agree. I hope I'm a good Dad.

Rikku: (playfully punches Tidus's arm)I'm sure you will be.

Paine: Say, that baby looks kinda like you, Yuna.

Yuna: (Looks at her baby)Really? I thought she looked more like Tidus. (sighs)Do you guys think that...I'll be a great mother?

Lulu: I'm sure you will be Yuna.

Yuna: Yeah, what should I name her?

Tidus: I'm not sure. Yuna and I were gonna name our baby Braska after Yuna's Dad if it were a boy but we weren't really sure about a girl

Paine: How about Alexandra?

Tidus: Nah, too long

Rikku: Oh oh oh! How about um...Trina? Sakura? Madison?

Yuna: I know, how about Simone?

Rikku: Hey, that's a good name! Good thinking Yunie! Ahem. Simone, the daughter of high summoner Yuna!

Tidus: Yeah, I like that honey

Yuna: (giggles) Yeah, sweet lil Simone

Wakka: (lifts Vidina off his shoulders and brings him closer to Yuna)Hey Vidina, this is Simone, she'll be your new friend. See?

Vidina: (Vidina stares at Simone and holds her hand)S-Simone!

(Everyone gasps and Lulu takes Vidina away from Wakka)

Lulu: Vidina said his first word!

(Everyone says awwwwwww)

Yep, you're probably wondering who that baby girl becomes when she grows up. In fact Simone is me, that was me when I was born. Vidina is my very close friend now and I still laugh at the fact that my name was his first word. After everyone rejoiced, something happened.

Woman: Ahhhh! Lady Yuna! strange lizards and Guado are attacking the village!

(everyone starts panicking)

Tidus: (pulls out his sword) Everyone, don't panic! We'll get rid of them!

Yuna: Oh no, what will we do? I can't leave Simone!

Rikku: we'll get rid of them!

Paine: Hell yeah!

My mother wanted to protect me so she stayed somewhere hidden.

Tidus: Let's go guys!

Wakka: Count me in!

Lulu: Be careful Wakka. I'll stay with Yuna

Vidina: Simone! Simone!

(Tromell appears with some guado guards with him and walks towards Yuna)

Tromell: Hand over the baby!

Tidus: Tromell?

Tromell: That's right, a new leader has taken my place so hand it over!

Yuna: No! You can't have her!

Rikku: Why? Why do you need the baby?

Tromell: My leader wants it, so he can have his revenge upon Lady Yuna.

Yuna: Me? What for?

Tidus: Who is this phony leader anyway?

Tromell: I cannot speak his name, But if you don't hand over the baby I will have my leader come and kill Lady Yuna

Tidus: Stay away from her!

Yuna: No, do what you want with me, just don't harm my daughter!

Lulu: Yuna don't!

Tromell: Sorry, but the baby is my leader's concern. Men, seize them and take the baby!

Tidus: Grrr. Get out of our island!

(Now the first battle in the game starts and after the battle you start a few new battles. After the battles)

Tidus: That's the last of them...

Yuna: (walks over) What if...they come back?

Tidus: Then we'll have to keep an eye out

Yuna: (looks down at Simone) Don't worry, I'll never let anything happen to you Darling. (kisses Simone's forehead)

2 - chapter one

Simone: Aaaaahhhh! I ran out of make-up! I need more please!

Agent: Yes miss!

Yep, that's me seventeen years later. I became a rockstar, lead singer of my band "The Dark angels"! I'm quite popular in some parts of Spira, mainly to the youth. This huge city that my concert was being held is Silverdome city. Everyone tried to rebuild Zanarkand in New spira but it would take too long so we renamed it Silverdome city.

Simone: Yo! I need more eyeshadow!

My nickname is Kool katt, or just call me Simone

Vidina: Hey! Kool katt! Are you ready yet?

This is Vidina, the son of Wakka and Lulu. You know the baby? Well him and I are very close friends. He's eighteen and his nickname is "dine" or "dinie"

Vidina: Let's get this party started!

Yava: Here Kool katt, take some of my eyeshadow

That girl is Yava, she's the same age as me and her nickname is Yav or Warrior chick. Her talent with machines and computers makes her a genius but she also carries on her fighting heritage from her tribe: The Penumbra tribe which has settled in New Spira

Yava: Oh I can't wait to do this concert!

Simone: Like me too! Thanks for the eyeshadow!

Melanie: We're gonna rock all of Spira!

Yava: We sure are Mel

That's Melanie, she's sixteen, and of course known as Baby boo. Or we just call her Mel.

Melanie: I can hear everyone cheering in the audience, can't you?

Simone: This is gonna be the best concert ever!

Osric: Are you guys ready yet? I'm ready to show some techno!

The final member of my band, Osric. He's an AI bhed as you can tell, he's sixteen and is known as Ozzy, Oz, or the wizard of Oz. But we usually call him Ozzy.

Melanie: Yes we're ready Ozzy

Vidina: Let's get this party started!

Nina: You said it...again

Chelsey: I can't wait to see this concert!

Those are my two annoying little sisters: Nina and Chelsey. As you can tell, my parents decided to have two more kids.

N&C: Hurray for the Dark angels!

Nina is fifteen, and known as the "Drama queen," "The girl who loves fashion and will die for it", and wants to become a fashion designer but really, she sucks at it! She's very cheerful and hyper and never stops talking but there are times when it's fun having her around...i guess.

Chelsey: Man everyone's gonna love your concert!

That is Chelsey. She's fourteen and my youngest sister. She looks alot like Mom and takes after her personailty in a way. She is the shy, quiet type and doesn't like to talk very much and loves to read. Her nickname is "Princess" or just Chels. And since she's really smart we call her the brain of the family.

Agent: Miss Simone, the concert is starting in five minutes! You better get ready!

Simone: I'm ready, let's go Angels!

All: Yeah!

(in the auditorium, the crowd is going crazy)

Ladies and Gentlemen, I present you, the Dark angels and their new song, Take me away!

(Crowd goes wild yelling Angels!Angels!Angels!)

Tama: This is it Kleeve, the ultimate hit of the season!

Kleeve: That's right Tama, we are here today in the Dragon fang auditorium in Silverdome city and the Dark angels are about to sing their greatest hit!

Tama: Their hit is from their best selling music sphere track: "Out of the Darkness" and are about to become number 2 on the top 10 list! Maybe even number 1!

Kleeve: They deserve to be number 1. The lead singer is Simone, the eldest daughter of the legendary high summoner Yuna herself and the legendary blitzzer Tidus!

Tama: That's quite a name to live up to...

Kleeve: It sure is Tama. Oh, they're starting folks!

(the crowd goes real crazy and the lights all turn on and fog comes out from behind the stage, you see Simone walking slowly forward then the music starts and the concert begins and in the backstage, Nina and Chelsey are being interviewed by the news people)

Nina: We're in charge of the backstage! Man I love this song!

Chelsey: Simone came up with it in one day!

(You see more of the concert then you see Nina and Chelsey swinging their hair and are being recorded)

Nina: Hey!give us some privacy please!

(Now you see some more of the concert and Simone is getting ready to do her solo. then lizard men come from behind Nina doing her make-up and Nina turns around surprised)

Chelsey: Oh no, Nina look out!

Nina: (dodges lizard's punch)Ahhhhh! That was so close!

(the girls run off)

Lizard#1: Get over here pipsqueaks!

Chelsey: Go away you big bullies!

Nina: Yeah! What she said!

(you see a girl standing in a dark corner and she starts laughing)

????: Guards! go ruin that concert! and you three...(looks at three boys)take their sphere! I heard it has info that we need!

(Now you see Simone doing her solo and after she finishes, a bunch of the lizard men come on the stage and one tries shooting at Simone with his gun but Simone dodges it on time)

Tama: Uh oh! looks like the concert is being jacked!

Kleeve: Some freaky lizard men are attacking the angels!

(crowd screams in fear and a guy yells out)

guy: Hey! Is this part of the show?

(Simone jumps into the air and kicks two lizards with a karate kick)

Agent: Miss Simone, everyone! Come with me!

(Nina and Chelsey slide down on a wire and land on the stage)

Chelsey: Don't worry sis! We'll take care of this!

Nina: Yeah, those lizards are gonna get sweaty!

Chelsey: huh?

Nina: Whatever let's kick @\$\$!

(Simone smiles then nodd and runs off)

Chelsey: Hey! Come and get us!

lizard#2: You brats won't win so easily!

AFTER BATTLE

Nina: Come on! After the mastermind!

(The girls run off and while they're running, they see the girl up ahead)

Chelsey: I see her! over there!

(when you go outside of the auditorium, people are running out and screaming)

Nina: Don't worry people of Spira, we'll get rid of these reptiles!

Chelsey: Let's show 'em what we got!

(Later after a few battles and when you reach Silverdome bridge)

Nina: Oh no, the Wattson brothers!

????: Hey! will you girls stop spoling our plans?!

Nina: What plans?

????: Our plans for the boss!

Chelsey: Okay, Simon, Nick, Charlie, you guys will never beat us!

Charlie: Is that so?

Nina: Y-Yeah!

Simon: Let's settle this the Mcclouds way!

Nick: And we're not giving back your sphere!

Chelsey: Thanks for telling us you had it!

Nina: Yeah! you guys are the worst!

Simon: That's it! we're gonna crush you now!

Simone: Not so fast boys!(You see Simone standing on a pole then she slides down on a wire and lands in front of Nina and Chelsey)

Nick: Oh no!

Charlie: It's Simone!

Simone: That's right, we're gonna kick your sorry asses and take back our sphere!

Charlie: But we need it for the boss!

Nina: Well you didn't ask!

Simon: That's it, let's get 'em boys!

Simone: Not if we get you first!

Nina: Bring it on punks!

Chelsey: Yeah!

AFTER BATTLE

(Boys moan and groan)

Simone: Didn't get enough? I'm ready for round 2!

Simon: We're not giving it back!

Nina: Hand it over boys!

????: Looking for something, girls?

(Girls look up to see the strange girl and she jumps down from the pole)

????: This was an easy steal, I stole it while you did your pitiful concert!

Simone: My concert was so not pitiful!

Chelsey: Anyone can sing better than you!

????: Please, everyone liked it because you're the daughter of High summoner Yuna, the one who brought the Eternal calm and defeated Vegnagun!

Nina: Just back off...Mckelly!

Mckelly: Why should I? Like I'm afraid of Lady Yuna's daughters, I'm not even afraid of her!

(A little dragon lands on Mckelly's shoulder)

Gawk: Lady Yuna coward! Hehehehhahahahaha

Simone: Shut-up you little-

Mckelly: Hey! don't talk that way to my pet! aw...it's okay Gawky, Mommy won't let these evil girls hurt you...

Nina: Hey! he was bad mouthing our mother!

Gawk: Evil girls! Evil girls! HAHA!

Mckelly: Ok now where we're we, oh yes! boys! how could you dissapoint me! how could you not defeat these idiots!

Nick: They're good boss.

Simon: Yeah, they've beaten us for the past three months

Charlie: We'll never beat them...

Mckelly: With that attitude you won't!

Simone: Give our sphere back!

Mckelly: Fine, have it all you like!

Chelsey: You didn't even give it to us!

Nina: You stole it because you don't know how to find spheres!

Mckelly:...Not true! Now let's settle this once and for all!Hahahahahahaha(coughs then takes her puffer and battle begins)

AFTER BATTLE

Mckelly: No! Not again!

Chelsey: What is the point of fighting us!

Simone: Seriously

Mckelly: Well, I'm outta here. I'll be back! Boys!(snaps)

Boys: Yes boss!

(Mckelly and the Wattson brothers run off)

Nina: They need a lesson or two on maturity

Chelsey: Cheyah

Vidina: (on Simone's communicator)Hey! did you guys find the sphere?

Simone: Roget that captain!

Yava: Hey, we're inside the auditorium. There seems to be something big going on

Nina: Like how do you know?

Melanie: Just come and check it out!

Simone: Fine with me. Come on, let's check it out!

Chelsey: Okay!

(girls run for auditorium)

Simone: Race y'all!

Nina: The loser has to buy us pepsis!

Mckelly Guado is my age, leader of the Mcclouds. She resents us not just because we're the daughters of a high summoner...three months ago when we left from home to become spherehunters, Mckelly showed up and stole the sphere we found. Luckily we fought her and won it back, but then she tripped on my foot and assumed I was trying to kill her. Pretty dumb eh?

(in the auditorium)

Nina: So uh, what's going on?

(The others run over)

Osric: Simone, Nina, Chelsey!

Chelsey: Hey!!

Simone: So what's up?

Yava: Looks like "The Allstars" have arrived!

Vidina: Great...

Simone: "The Allstars?"

Nina: No way!

(The you see two teenage girls walk by)

girl#1: I can't believe that Jake, lead singer of "The Allstars" looked at me!

girl#2: I know, he's sooo hot!

Melanie: Did they just say Jake?

Simone: (gulp)Jake? he's hot!

Yava: Oh my god! Here he comes!(gasps)

(Jake walks by looks at Simone then winks at her)

Simone: (mouth wide open)Whoa

Yava: I know

Simone: (jumps into the air excited)He looked at me!!!!

(All girls cheer)

Osric: Uh...congrats, I guess hehe

Vidina: I can't stand him! he's such a fake! I don't trust him!

Nina: oooo, jealous?

Vidina: Me? no way!

Melanie: Sure...

Vidina: Really, I just don't like him. That's my opinion, ya?

Jake Starr, lead singer of his rock band the Allstars! he's a total hottie! I've had a major crush on him for two years now! That moment he looked at me, my heart almost leapt

Chelsey:(waves her hand in Simone's face)Simone, Simone?

Yava: Are you there Kool Katt?

Simone: Oh, what? sorry. I was you know, dreaming about Jake...

Melanie: Well, we have to like get going!

Nina: let's go!

I was dreaming that Jake would fall in love with me. Kinda like a Romeo and Juliet scene, but maybe I was kidding myself. Maybe, that would never happen. Nah

ABOARD THE PHOENIX

Probably you're thinking, Wow! what a ship! This is our headquarters, the phoenix. My squad's name is the Eaglewings, we left Besaid Island three months ago to search for spheres and began a journey. We dreamt to become sphere hunters ever since we were kids. Plus I've been told stories from my mom about her sphere hunting days and it influnced me. Anyways um...This airship was built by Shinra corp. Isn't the phoenix a beauty?

(When you go to bridge)

Osric: Hey, shouldn't we watch that sphere?

Vidina: The one we found in Silverdome?

Osric: Yeah. It might have some cool info on it.

Simone: Ok, Yava, can you install this?

Yava: Not a problem

(Sphere screen turns on)

Chelsey: Wonder what's on it...

Nina: Ssshhhh!

(you see an image of two boys)

boy#1: I have to find a way, I have to!

boy#2: Find a way for what?

boy#1: To bring eternal peace, I didn't come all the way here for nothing

boy#2: Please dude, we've looked everywhere, there is no answer

boy#1: I have to make it up to her, or she'll never forgive me!

boy#2: What d'you mean?

boy#1: I mean, this gem could bring happiness, and light to those who are hopeless. I can bring that, and prove to her that I'm well for that!

boy#2: Whatever

(End of sphere)

Vidina: What was that about?

Melanie: All I saw was two boys, and one of them was a cute blonde!

Yava: Cute boys aren't important right now, Mel

Chelsey: Hmmmmmm....what were they talking about?

Nina: Something about a gem and her?

Simone: We have to search for clues, and find out about the gem

Yava: I've downloaded the date to this sphere and it's been recorded over a million years ago...

Nina: And it still works?

Chelsey: That can't be, maybe it's date is incorrect

Osric: Eaglewings! I've detected something from Daluk mountain in New spira, but theres a distress call from the village near it

Simone: Get on your gear guys! we're going to that village in New spira, maybe more spheres of the same boy will be found

Vidina: And find out about that gem!

(When you select the area on the map and ship lands)

You're probably wondering, about the whole New spira thing. Eighteen years ago, after Vegnagun's defeat, a huge group of people decided to build homes on empty lands and discovered new areas as well to live in and we decided to call those new areas New spira pretty much making it a seperate land.

Nina: Ow! I broke a nail!

Chelsey: Good for you Nina

Simone: Dine, when we get to the village and find out the distress call, land here and try to detect where in the mountain the sphere is

Vidina: Roger

Osric: Be careful girls

Nina: We will, don't worry Ozzy, you're not my Mom

Osric: Okay...

Chelsey: That way!

(After you cross the field and reach village)

ranch guy: It's great of you to come

Simone: Uh, you called us?

Nina: We're not here to waste time, we have stuff to do!

ranch guy: Yes I know, But the chocobos here just don't seem to be acting right

Chelsey: Chocobos? I haven't seen one since I was little... I thought they were extinct

ranch guy: Are you out of your mind? Everyone is soooo into machina, chocobos are no use to them anymore, nope. So we bred the ones we found and brought 'em here

Simone: So, you called us here, because your chocobos are acting weird?

ranch guy: Yes

Nina: Sorry sir, but that's not exactly a mission. Come on, let's get going!

ranch guy: Hold on, I do have this!(points to a glider on the ground)
Simone: I've always wanted one of those! How did you get a dragon wing 400x glider?
ranch guy: That's a little secret, but I'll tell you if you round up those chocobos
Nina: No thanks
Simone: Hey, that glider could come in handy, let's just do what he asks!
Chelsey: Well, since we're helping someone, I'm in!
Nina: Oh...fine
Simone: So, what do we do?
(After round-up)
Simone:(receives the glider)oh yeah baby!
ranch guy: Well, I really owe you. Oh, here's this too!(gives them 3 hi-potions)
Nina: Oh, it was nothing
ranch guy: Please, come by anytime girls!
Chelsey: You bet we will! Just give us a call!
Vidina:(on the communicator)Hey! we've detected the sphere!
Simone: Where?
Yava: It's in a cave, you have to find it. You'll have to glide there but we have no gliders...
Simone: Do not worry, I just got one. Take us to the spot!
Osric: Go on the deck, we have a lancer ready.
(After you go on the airship deck and when you glide to the cave)
Nina: It's so gloomy, I'm scared! Uh, c-can we uh you know...turn around and call it quits?
Chelsey: Nina's a chicken!
Nina: Hey, stoppit!
Simone: Please stop! we have to concentrate...
Nina: AAAAAHHHHH! I think I stepped on something! ewwww!
Chelsey: Stop your whining, though it is vile and disgusting in here!
Simone: Filthy. Let's follow this trail, it could lead us to the sphere
Nina: Oh it better, or I'm throwing a fit!
(After you go through cave)
Nina: uh, why is it so like, quiet in here?
Simone: Something doesn't seem right...
Chelsey: Look out!!!
(Huge fiend appears)
Simone: I knew it! you're going down!
(After battle)
Nina: Look, the sphere!
Chelsey: Go Eaglewings!
Yava:(on the communicator)Did you guys get it???
Simone: Yes we did!
Vidina: Good, now come back to the phoenix and we'll watch it!
Simone: We're on our way!
(Back on the phoenix)
Melanie: Just on time, let's watch the sphere!
Vidina: right, everyone focus!
(Sphere turns on and you see the blonde boy with a girl)
girl: please, listen to me. I know we've been friends for awhile but you have to go...
boy: Why?

girl: You've been so focused on this gem, you're not even paying attention to the real world!

boy: Yes I am, why do you think I made it?

girl: Oh just forget it okay? I don't want to talk to you!

boy: Whatever then, I'll prove to you that I'll bring peace, even if I have-

(Sphere ends)

Nina: That's it? it only shows the back of their heads!

Chelsey: It's that boy, but this time it showed the girl he was talking about

Osric: Who are they?

Simone: Dunno, but it was over a million years ago. Maybe we should just move on

Chelsey: That boy, he looks like someone...

Melanie: Kool katts right I mean, it was so long ago...

Yava: Fine then, where to?

Osric: Hmmmm....there's something going on at Fort condor...

Nina: should we go?

Simone: Mmmm...maybe. Someone there might know about that boy and girl

Chelsey:(speaks quietly)I highly doubt that...

Vidina: okay we're at fort condor!

(Ship lands at fort condor *note:this area is from FF7 so i dont own this area!*)

Chelsey: uh, why is everyone staring at us?

Yava: They're creeping me out

Nina: they're looking at my butt!

Simone: No they're not it's uh...too big!

Nina: Hey!

Osric: So uh, what's supposed to be going on here?

Melanie: Let's ask around

Nina: Ooooh look, a gift shop! Let's go shopping!

Chelsey: Yay! let's go!

Vidina: Hey, we have stuff to do, ya?

Melanie: Oh, we won't be long!

Osric: Please, the way you girls shop it'll take forever...

Yava: what do you mean by forever?

Vidina: don't you ever get bored of shopping?

All girls: No way!!!

Vidina+Osric: Aw man...

Simone: Why don't we take a look around first then shop?

Nina: Fine with me, but I need new shoes, maybe even a new skirt and...

Osric: Come on!

Yava: Fine, let's go girls!

(at a statue of Yuna)

some guy: Ah, great to see you, daughters of the legendary High summoner Yuna

(all of the people in the fort bow)

Nina: Uh...how did you know?

Chelsey: Uh Nina, I think they can tell. Everyone in Spira knows we're Mom's kids

Simone: So uh, what's going on?

some guy: We have been wanting to meet the daughters of Lady Yuna, she is like a goddess to us, and we follow her...

Nina: (whispers to Simone)Must be some kinda cult...

some guy: She is more than just a human...she is...

Simone: a goddess?(All of her friends try hard not to laugh)

some guy: No, she is invincible!

Simone: Same thing pal...

some other person:HELLLLPPPPP! someone! Lizards and fiends!

Simone: The Mcclouds!

Nina: Oh, what do they want now?

Vidina: They must've followed us here guys

Yava: Let's give these Mccows a taste of their own medicine!

Osric: Oh yeah baby

Simone: Let's go!

(At the tower's top)

Simone: Mckelly!

Mckelly: Ah, look who showed up! The chicken wings!HAHAHAHAHAHAHA(coughs and takes puffer)

Gawk: HAHAHAHA! CHICKEN WINGS!

Nina: You should wash your mouth a little more Mcsnob!

Mckelly: P-lease! you need a head check!

Nina: I so do not Mckelly!

Simon: Yes, you so do Nin-wit!

Nina: Hey! how dare you! It's Nina, not Nin-wit!

Nick: Whatever, anyways, we're gonna blow up this pile of junk and build a new fort here...uh...

Charlie: Bosses's idea

Mckelly: That's right! we're gonna build a fort here for the Mcclouds! we need more forces!

Simone: For what? just to beat us?

Mckelly: no, more than that!

Chelsey: Like what?

Mckelly: Okay, you're like wasting my time now, let's get 'em boys!

(after battle)

Mckelly: Buh-bye. But later on, we're going to win! smell ya later!(Mcclouds run off)

Simone: That's what you say all the time losers!!!

Nina: Did you hear what she said? she daid I needed a head check! I so do not need one!

Chelsey: Uh-huh, sure you don't

Nina: What do you mean Chels?

Simone: you really do need one

Nina: No I don't!

Simone+Chelsey: HAHAHAHAHAHAHAHAHAHAHAHAHA

Nina: You guys are so mean!

What Nina would never understand, that she's a blonde stuck in a brunette's body

some guy: Thank you girls, how can we ever repay you?

Simone: Uh...it's okay, really

Nina: a discount on your gift shop!

Chelsey:(speaks quietly) Nothing really, we just help out people

some guy: Oh, but we can't let you leave with nothing

Chelsey: Why not?

some guy: You three are Lady Yuna's daughters, you three have quite the names to live up to. And your mother has done many heroic acts, you girls take after her

Nina: (yawns)if you say so...

Vidina: Well, ready to go?

Yava: Already?

Simone: first things first...

(Everyone stares)

Nina: Shopping!

(All girls cheer and the boys sigh)

Osrice: Oh no

Melanie: Yipppeeeee!

some guy: Have fun, daughters of the high summoner!

(After the scene and when you're aboard the phoenix)

Osrice: Hey, we just got a transmission you guys!

Vidina: from where?

Osrice: still analyzing...it's from the calm lands?huh...that's odd

Chelsey: Well, can't we at least see it?

Osrice: Oh fine...

(you see a girl on the transmission)

girl: Hey, you are the Eaglewings right? And the daughters of Lady Yuna are there too? Meet me at the Calm lands I have a favor to ask you. This is Jasmyn, Lt. of the Black cobras.

(transmission finishes)

Nina: Black cobras?

Simone: Some organization I suppose?

Vidina:(stretches his arms in the air)So, are we going or what?

Yava: If you want to, that Jasmyn girl seems...kind

Simone: How d'you know Yav? You haven't met her

Yava: Hey, back in my tribe, we could see if the person was kind from their eyes. Her's were shiny, which means she's trustworthy

Nina: Cool. and kinda weird hehe. no effence

Osrice: Why did you leave the tribe Yava?

Yava: please, ask another time

Nina: Whatever you say warrior chick

Melanie: Hey Drama Queen, wanna go check out some cute guys at the calm lands? maybe those Black cobra guys are hotties!

Nina: I'm so in Mel!(Her n melanie jump into the air and high five)

Chelsey:(speaks quietly)You know, there's more to life than boys

Nina+Melanie: Nuh-uh!

Simone: Okay little kids, let's act like teenagers here...

Nina: You're a big meanie Kool katt!

Osrice: Well if we're done arguing can we go now?

Simone: Right...sorry, let's go!

(At Calm lands)

Jasmyn: Ah, the Eaglewings....Am I right?

Nina: Absolutely!

Yava:(with her arms crossed)Why did you call us?

Simone:(walks over and stands beside Yava)Yeah, why?

Jasmyn: Oh, we need your help with our organization. Other organizations like the Mcclouds have been spreading rumors about us and we need someone who is well known by people who can talk to these people before they all kill each other. If Lady Yuna's daughters were there to tell them, maybe they'd all

stop.

Simone: This is just like Eighteen years ago with the Youth league and New yevon...

Jasmyn: Yes, Lady Yuna took care of that. She has tried her best to bring peace among Spira but later in the years more groups have formed and started fighting with one another

Chelsey: Why do people fight over dumb things?

Jasmyn: We humans tend to judge one another for the stupidest things and we often don't agree so we fight and argue. But unlike the other organizations, the Black cobras are here to fight for freedom and stop this madness

Simone: So, you assume that this Black cobras organization will stop this fighting? My mother did mention something about bringing peace, that you can try to win it but in the end you'll just lose it again

Jasmyn: Lady Yuna is a very brave lady, that is what gave her the legendary title. She is admired by all of us

Nina: But people try to use her to clean up their dirty work...

Simone: I'm sick of people using Mom as a carpet, she's a human being too you know!

Jasmyn: Ok, now on to headquarters. You can speak to General Brock.(walks off)

(when you go to a certain point)

Simone: Look at this!

Nina: What?

Simone: They've made the Calm lands into a battle site!

Osric: Look at all of these machina turrets!

Yava: impressive

Simone: I don't like this! the calm lands should've stayed the same as always! I'm tired of people making sacred places into...different places!

Chelsey: chill kool katt, I agree. Why don't you tell that to Jasmyn?

Simone: Don't worry, I will

Osric: Jasmyn's pretty cute

Nina: Wha? Ozzy!

Melanie: She is sooo not cute!

Vidina: I don't think she's cute, but she's okay...

Simone: Vidina!

Vidina: Sorry...

Yava: Enough chatting and let's go to the headquarters!

Simone: Fine. Eaglewings! let's go!

(At headquarters)

Chelsey: Hey, this used to be a chocobo ranch! I remember Mom took us here when we were little

Nina: Yeah, We got to see little chocobos and we got candy from Clasko!

Jasmyn: Welocme to our headquarters, General Brock would like to speak to the eldest daughter of High summoner Yuna

Simone: Me? Why?

Jasmyn: Do I look like I know? just follow me

Vidina: I'm coming too!

Simone: What?

Vidina: Hey, I don't want anything to happen to you

Simone: Uh, I'm pretty sure nothing's gonna happen

Jasmyn: He can come but no one else

(At generals' base)

Jasmyn: General Brock sir, here is Simone, eldest daughter to Lady Yuna

Brock: Ah, Simone. I've always wanted to meet you

Simone: Uh...that's cool

Brock: You are a singer are you not?

Vidina: Okay dude serious questions!

Brock: I beg your pardon?

Simone: Don't mind him, that's my friend

Brock: I see. Anyway, the Black cobras have always wanted someone legendary like Lady Yuna to join, but she does not want to join for various reasons. But you, as one of her daughters, might have a different perspective. What do you say? would you like to join us in the fight for peace?

I was going to shout out NO! but I have been thinking about joining an organization but of course my Mom didn't approve. This was my chance...might as well take it

Simone: Sure, but, I have a question to ask if I may?

Brock: ma'am?

Simone: Why couldn't you have built your Headquarters somewhere else besides the Calm lands? I mean...My Mom talked those tourists into leaving this place the way it was and then you make it into a battlesite! I don't really like it but my Mom would make a huge deal out of this!

Brock: Yes, I know

Vidina: Well?

Brock: I have always looked up to Lady Yuna, she is and inspiration to all of us! Her spirit stands above us all! But in order to repay her duties, we've all divided into groups fighting for peace. So, will you join us?

Vidina: Simone?

Simone: Well, I've kinda thought about joining a group but I don't want to disobey my Mother's orders and plus we're on a mission...

Brock: I see...hmmm...say, we could help you guys out if you're in trouble or something like that. Just give us a call and we'll send some troops

Simone:(nodds) Sounds good. thanks.

Vidina: yeah, let's go!

Jasmyn: We'll see ya later!

(outside base)

Yava: so how did it go?

Simone: Please, let's just leave

Chelsey: You joined didn't you?

Simone: Nope! If Mom found out I'd be in huge trouble! she doesn't want me to end up used...

Yava: Can we go now?

(on the phoenix)

Vidina: Eaglewings! at the bridge now!

(when you go to bridge)

Osric: We just got a transmission! from bikaniel desert!

Chelsey: That's cool, maybe it's Aunt Rikku!

(transmission starts and you see Rikku with Paine in the background)

Rikku: Is this thing on?(Paine in the back says "Yes Rikku") Okay, hey guys! Whazzup! how's it going? I need you guys to do me a favour. come to my Home in the Al bhed home and I'll tell you kay? Bye!

(transmission ends)

Nina: Yay! That was Aunt Rikku, she's soooo cool!

Rikku isn't really my aunt, she's really my second cousin because she's my Mom's cousin. As you probably know, she was one of Mom's guardians twenty-years ago, and helped her defeat Sin as well as

Vegnagun. We call her Aunt Rikku because she loves to be called by that and she and Mom are more like sisters than cousins. Her and a bunch of Al bhed rebuilt home and now it's even better than it was before.

Osric: Let's go guys! Oh we're getting incoming data...there's a sphere located in the Bikaniel desert! isn't that where we're going?

Nina: That's right Ozzy! Yay for Aunt Rikku!

(On phoenix deck)

Chelsey: Wow, what a spectacular view!

Nina: It sure is. I wonder if Aunt Rikku can see us!

Chelsey: I'm pretty sure she can see the airship, dumbass!

Nina: Hey! Stop it princess!

Simone: Race ya!

Chelsey: Wha?

Simone: Whoever can glide there first wins!

Nina: Not now Kool katt!

Simone: Stinkin chocobos!

Nina+Chelsey: Hey!

(Girls giggle while they're gliding then all of a sudden a fiend flies right by them and the wings on their gliders snap and they fall towards a hole in the ground)

Girls: AAAAAAAHHHHHHHHHHHHHHHHHHHHHHHH!

(Now after they land on the ground down the hole)

Nina: NOOOOO! we're dying!!!AAAAHHHHHHH!!!!

Chelsey: Nina...we're not falling anymore...

Nina:(Looks around)Oh

Simone: Ow, sheesh. We fell down a hole of all places!

Nina: We're Underground? Not the greatest place to be!

Chelsey: Obviously. Any ideas Simone? because it's pretty scary down here

Simone: Let's stick close, if we split up, just whistle. Okay?

Nina: Of course Kool katt!

That's something our parents taught us when we were kids, because twenty years ago, my Dad told my Mom if they were to get seperated then just whistle. I find it cute actually.

Vidina: Where are you guys? we had a hard time reaching you

Nina: Oh uh...Dinie, we uh, crashed into a hole...and um...yeah

Osric: Well we're glad you guys are okay meet us at the surface.

Yava: The computer is showing me that you guys are underground, there's a little path that leads straight to the surface. Follow that path, and try to find the sphere!

Nina: oh yeah, that...Kay, now we go!

Chelsey: It's action time girls!

Simone: Let's show the world what we're made of!

Nina: We're made of flesh and bones...

Chelsey:(shakes her head)Wow, you're stupid

Nina: Shut-up!

Simone: Come on!!!!

Nina: Geez, sor-ry!

(At the end of the cave path)

Mckelly: You three again...

Simone: Trying to find that sphere, mccow?

(girls laugh)

Mckelly: So not funny! I had to come into this filthy underground lair just to find a god damn sphere! And it's just unfair!

Chelsey: Well we crashed here

Mckelly: Now where was I? oh yes! get outta here!

Gawk: (pops-up) Yeah get outta here!

Simone: Fine, then you're asking for the beat!

Mckelly: What-ever!

Gawk: That's right! hahahahhahahahaahhaaha

Chelsey: Oh shove it up your mouth lizard!

(After battle)

Mckelly: Nooo! I lost again! the Mcclouds will win! How are you three sooo good?

Nina:(^_^)Well, just practice really hehehehe

Chelsey: So, why don't you get outta here!

Mckelly: Fine!

Simone: Go on, prove you're strong!

Mckelly: Ok. Come on Gawk

Gawk: Okay...huh?

(a fiend appears behind the girls)

Mckelly: AAAHHHHHH! monster!(runs off with Gawk flying beside her)

Simone: Yeah right-uh-oh

(fiend chases girls through lair then the girls prepare to fight)

Nina: we're not cowards!

Simone: Go to hell lizard-breath!

(After battle)

Chelsey: Fiend's dead, Mckelly runs off, and we get the sphere!

Nina: This is a kodak moment

Chelsey: What are you talking about?

Nina: Oh, sorry. That commercials like stuck in my head

Simone: I see the surface!

(Paine appears)

Paine: Hey! need help?

Chelsey: Paine!

Nina: Wuzzup?

Paine: Nothing. Come on, why are you girls down here?

Nina: Uh...

Chelsey: let me explain. There was a crevice in the earth and we descended from our airship. In this Underground lair, and we vanquished that Fiend to get our sphere

Paine: Very...descriptive

Nina: That's why she's the "Brain" of the family

Paine: I see. So, Rikku transmitted a message to you guys. Is that why you're-

Chelsey: Present?

Simone: Chelsey!

Paine: Yes, present

Chelsey: precisely

Paine: Okay, come with me

(on the surface)

Rikku: Heyyyyy! come over here and give your Aunt Rikku a big hug!

Nina: Yayyyyy!

Chelsey: Aunt Rikku!

(Nina and Chelsey give Rikku a big hug)

Rikku: Whoa! you girls have a sense of style! it's so fab!

Nina: Same with you!

Simone: Hey, so why did you call us?

Rikku: Can't you give me a hug?

Simone: Oh of course!(hugs Rikku)

Rikku: Okay, come follow me. I'll show you the prob.

Nina: ookey dokey

(At the Al bhed home in Rikku's house)

Rikku: You guys can stay here as long as you want!

Chelsey: Whoa...nice set up

Nina: loves it!

Simone: So Aunt Rikku...what's the problem?

Rikku:(pouring drinks)Oh!thanks for reminding me! follow me!

(After you follow Rikku to a part in the desert and a bunch of machina are going around like crazy)

Rikku: Our machina has gone berserk. I remember eighteen years ago this sort of thing happened because of me but I'm sure it's not my fault this time!

(Paine walks over)

Paine: So, we were wondering if you could destroy some of the machina along with us so we can get the job done

Simone: Fine with me

Paine is another one of my Mom's friends. She helped her defeat Vegnagun along with Aunt Rikku. She never seems too cheerful but my Mom says that she's still quite warm-hearted

(Buddy and Brother run over)

Buddy: Rao kenmc! Mu ru'c ed paah? (Hey girls! so how's it been?)

Nina: ciban-navvel! (Super-riffic!)

Chelsey: oib, zicd rambehk baubma... (yup, just helping people...)

Brother:Famm, yna drao kuehk du ramb ic un fryd? (Well, are they going to help us or what?)

Simone: Oui pad fa lhlma Brother! (You bet we are Uncle Brother!)

Rikku: Wow, you've really improved on your Al bhed! good job girls!

Brother: ymneka, lusa uh kenmc! (Alright, come on then girls!)

That's right, we've been learning Al bhed. Aunt Rikku had been teaching us for the past few months of our sphere hunting journey. I gotta say we have improved

Vidina: Heyyyy!!!!(runs over with the others)

Yava: You guys alright?

Nina: Yeppers

Osric: Did you get the-

Nina: yes we got the sphere Ozzy

Simone: Well let's take down the machina and find the culprit!

Melanie: Yeah!

(After you destroy all the machina and you go into a control room in the Al bhed home)

Nina: Okay, so where's the machina mennace?

Chelsey: It has to be in here

Simone: Look, a switch...maybe this could-

Chelsey: Shut off the machina!

Nina: What are you talkin about?

Chelsey: just pull the damn switch!

Simone: Okay...aaahhhhh!

(door opens and a huge machina comes out)

Nina: there it is!

Simone: let's tear this tin can apart!

(After battle)

Nina: Whoa, thatas so...

Chelsey: Hard? or easy?

Simone: between

Nina: Okay, let's like get the hell out of here and watch the sphere at Aunt Rikku's house!

Chelsey: yayyyyyy!!!!Aunt Rikku!

(out of control room)

Vidina: That's all of them! I think

Osric: Phew. they sure can put up a fight

Yava: But you can easily take them apart

Nina: Hey! we still have to watch the sphere!

Simone: uh huh. Now, we can see if it's on that boy, and learn more about history...

Melanie: Boooo!!!

Chelsey: Hey! I like learning!

Rikku: Hey y'all! Come on stay at my house for a bit. I have popcorn and movies!

Yava: Well what are we waiting for? come on!

Vidina: But first, we have to watch the sphere, ya?

Rikku: Don't worry Dine. You sound sooo much like your Dad when you worry

Vidina: Really?

Paine: Come on, I don't want to stay here all night

Rikku: Okay sheesh Painey!

Paine: STOP CALLING ME PAINEY DAMMIT!

(At Rikku's house)

Rikku: All right let's watch this sphere

(Sphere turns on)

Boy: so, this is where the sage lives?

Girl: well you said to go to the marsh right?

Boy: Well yes, it says on the note: Meet me at my home in the marsh signed Nahomi the sage

Girl: Oh you better be right

Nahomi: Welcome my young friends

Boy: Are you Nahomi the sage?

Nahomi: Why yes I am.

Boy: Why do you need us?

Nahomi: There is word going around about a young rebel who's determined to bring peace by using a gem he made am I correct?

Boy: Yes, but I'm no rebel you see. I just want to free my people and stop this world war before we all end up dead

Nahomi: I know. That's why I needed you to come here, I want to help out

Girl: Well, is there a way to power-p the gem to make it work?

Nahomi: Hmmmm...there is a cave on the sacred mountain Mt. Dracklyn, where the white ones live and

they are mystical creatures who can make things by song. Maybe they hold the key to powering the gem

Boy: Yes, then that's what we'll do...

Girl: Hey, I just thought of something, why don't we create a whole new world! a peaceful one, where everyone can live peacefully and no war.

Boy: Good idea! then that's what we'll do, with this gem we'll make a better world for the people who have suffered!

Nahomi: Well, let's go find the white ones!

(Sphere ends)

Osric: White ones?

Simone: A whole new world out of a song? out of a song? that's next to impossible!

Nina: Oh, we have to find more spheres, I want to know more!

Melanie: Yeah me too! How can you make a world out of a song?

Vidina: We're gonna have to find out on our own, ya? There's so much we don't know about Spira

Nina: Oh, poopie!

Rikku: Hey, that's my word!

Nina: Sorry Aunt Rikku...hehehe

Chelsey:(twiddling her thumbs while thinking)Hmmmmm

Nina: Whatcha thinking Chels?

Chelsey: I'm just curious...What are those white ones and how can they possibly think they can make a world out of a song? none of this seems to add up!

Paine: Well, it's getting late

Rikku: It sure is, do you guys wanna rest here?

Simone: We;d love too

Rikku: Great,I have your beds ready, sleep tight!

(After you sleep and you go outside of Rikku's house)

Rikku: Good morning!

Simone: Morning!

Rikku: So, are you guys leaving?

Simone: Yeah, we gotta find more spheres. Still none of them make sense...

Rikku: I can see that, well good luck on your journey

Simone: thanks Aunt Rikku

Rikku: Well, see ya then!

(Now you see the kids on the phoenix deck and the Phoenix takes off into the sky)

Nina: Byeeeeeee!

Chelsey: we love you Aunt Rikku!

(in the phoenix)

Yava: Your Aunt is cool!

Nina: she so is! Ow! I broke a nail!

Chelsey:(speaks quietly) Ummm...what kind of song could they have been talking about?

Nina: Like who knows? I mean it was like a million years ago. How could anyone like know now?

Simone: It's called we search for the truth Nina!

Osric: Hey! I detect a sphere!

Melanie: Where Ozzy? where?

Osric: Hmm...ummm...Lake Macalania!

Melanie: Sweet!

Vidina: Macalania here we come!

(at Lake Macalania)

As you've probably heard, Eighteen years ago the Macalanian woods vanished with its people along with it. Luckily the lake's still around but it's much quieter here now...

(outside of agency)

Nina: look, an old geezer's sleeping out here!

Chelsey: he might be so cold! we should bring him inside!

Yava: Right now? Princess, we have stuff to do you know!

Chelsey: But...we can't just leave an old man to sit out here in the cold like this...

Simone: sorry but we're gonna have to!

(old man starts to wake up)

Melanie: he's waking up!

Osric: Hello? why are you sleeping out here?

old man: Huh? I fell asleep out here?

Vidina: Uh yes you did sir

old man: Oh my gosh, that never happens hehehe, anyways, why y'all staring at me like that for?

Simone: You are one crazy old man

old man: How am I crazy? I live here!

Nina: How can you live HERE?

old man: long story...but say, if you collect ice crystals from the fiends here then I'll give ya this mana scroll I found!

Simone:(sighs) How much?

old man: ummm about 130

Osric: What???

old man: Fine then, don't get the mana scroll

Nina:...is there a discount?

old man: discount? no, but...if you defeat the ice crawler, I'll give it to you for free

Nina: Huh? what's that?

old man: It's a fiend who sleeps beneath the lake ice, it settled there twenty years ago when the temple sunk. It comes up if you walk on its territory

Simone: Well kill it don't worry!

Vidina: Hello, I thought we were here for the sphere!

Simone: Oh right. Well, catch ya later old man!

old man: Old man? Whatever(goes back to sleep)

(at black cobras camp)

Jasmyn: Hey, guys! over here!

Melanie: what's up?

Jasmyn: We've set up a camp here and our radars detected a sphere around here

Simone: Hmm...could it be in the lake?

Jasmyn: The lake! oh, I haven't thought of that! We should swim in the lake and find it

Nina: Uh...not such a good idea, the ice crawler lives there

Jasmyn: ice crawler?

Yava: Yes, the monster in the lake. It'll come up if you disturb it

Jasmyn: If you say so, we'll have to kill that ice crawler in order to get that sphere

Osric: You're hot...will you marry me?

Jasmyn:(slaps Osric in the face)No! Now where were we?

Nina: Find that ice crawler, it's getting a can of whoop @\$\$!

Melanie: It's Eaglewing butt-kicking time!

Yava: Oh I love this!

(when you walk to the center of the lake and the ground starts to shake)

Simone: Here it comes!

(A huge sea serpent looking fiend bursts out of the ice)

(After battle)

Simone: All right, into the lake we go!

Jasmyn: The sphere is in the sunken temple

Nina: Let's go girls!

(the girls put in their breathing masks and dive into the water)

(After finding the sphere in the temple)

Simone: Guys, we found it!

Vidina: Good job Kool Katt!

Osric: Come back to the surface now!

(At surface)

Simone: It is sooo cold!

Jasmyn: I bet, where's the sphere?

Nina: Here you go(hands the sphere to jasmyn)

(sphere turns on)

Boy: It's close now, the lair of the white ones is close by...

Girl: I know, what do you think we should do Timothy?

Timothy: I think we should rest a bit then we'll find the lair

Girl: Okay then

(light shines around them)

Timothy: what the -

Girl: What's happening?

(white dragons fly around them)

Girl: It's...the white ones...

Timothy: You're right Serena, it's them

Serena: come on! let's get them to sing a new world!

Nahomi: These are Whistlers

Timothy: Whistlers?

Nahomi: Yes, singing dragons. They were called the white ones because their silver scales are worth lots of money and their songs are touching

Serena: Let's ask them to sing for us!

(sphere ends)

Simone: Timothy and Serena

Jasmyn: A world out of a song...pretty weird if you ask me

Simone: I wonder if they actually created that world...hmmm

Chelsey: The only other world we know is the Farplane

Nina: there could be another world!

Melanie: Spira, the world full of wonders!

Nina: Good one Mel, sounds like an advertisement for a vacation spot commercial!

Yava: What's that gotta do with anything?

Jasmyn: Ahem, anyways, best luck on your journey. But if you need us just call us and we'll help out

Osric: Don't worry, we'll be calling!

(Nina places her hand on his mouth)

Nina: Mind him hehehe

Jasmyn: Right...Farewell Eaglewings!

Simone: See ya later Jasmyn!

It still didn't make perfect sense, Timothy and Serena wanted those Whistlers to sing a song and recreate a new world, what world? The search for the truth had just begun

CHAPTER ONE IS COMPLETE!

3 - chapter two

old man: Hey, you kiddos again!

Simone: where's the mana scroll?

old man: oh yes, I saw you defeat that ice crawler, what a show!

Nina: Okay, stop yapping and give it!

old man: Alright, here you go! good luck on your journey!

Simone: Thank you, let's go!

(Aboard the phoenix)

Chelsey: Hey, why don't we go home and visit? we have been sphere hunting for three months now. everyone probably misses us

Nina: Yeah, Mom's probably worried sick!

Yava: yayyyyyyy we're going home!

(on deck while the phoenix flies over Besaid)

Home sweet home. This is where my sisters along with Vidina were born. There are great memories here...

(phoenix lands on Besaid)

Simone: Hey everyone! we're back!

(a group of teenage girls start waving excitedly and screaming *note: these charaters you're about to see are from other ff games and do not belong to me!)

Rinoa: Kool katt! guys! You're finally back!

Selphie: We've missed you soooo much!

Nina: I'm feeling popular again!!!!

Yuffie: Nina! Melanie!!! whazzup!!!

Garnet: It's been like forever without you guys!

Leon: Dine, Ozzy over here!

Vidina: Hey Leon! Zidine!and the rest of the gang!

Osric: What's shakin bacon?

Zidane: Oh that never gets old!

Seifer: Yeah, it's been boring here

Simone: So, how's it been?

Rinoa: well, Selphie still has her mental break downs...

Selphie: SHUT-UP RINOA!

Yuffie: And Garnet and Zidane are still together of course

Yava: Still?

Garnet: Well obviously he can't walk away from a pretty girl like me!

Nina: Of course not Garnet!

(While everyone talks to their friends, Chelsey stands alone watching)

Chelsey:(sighs)Well, home sweet home...

We are the most popular kids on the island! yes and you probably know why...

Wakka: Hey! teen queens!

(Wakka and Lulu walk over)

Nina: Wakka, Lulu!

Vidina: Mom, Dad!

Lulu: My Vidina, you're getting taller everytime I see you...

Vidina: Of course Mom

Wakka: So, how long has it been? Three months? What's up with you guys?

Chelsey: We came by to visit

Nina:(nudges Wakka's stomach)I see you're still getting chubby

(all of the teens laugh)

Wakka: Hey, that's not funny!

Vidina: Well pops you are getting kind of chubby...

Wakka: All right enough of that, anyways...

Lulu: Your mother is in the temple, you should go see her. She's really missed all of you

Simone: I see Mom hasn't changed

Wakka: When you see her try not to be hard on her, she uh hasn't been herself lately...

Chelsey: Alright then let's go see Mom!

Nina: Daddy might be with her!

(girls run off and Wakka smacks himself on the head)

Wakka: Oh man, I forgot-

Lulu: Don't worry about it, Yuna'll tell them

Wakka: Oh...right

Wakka and Lulu were also my Mother's guardians. Mom told my sisters and I when she was seven, after her father died she was taken to Besaid and raised by the temple. Wakka and Lulu would keep her company and Lulu would scold her! But the one thing she says that is important to her is that Lulu and Wakka will always be like her big brother and sister

(Meanwhile on the Mccloud HQ)

Mckelly:(yawns)Oh, I can't wait to defeat those stupid Eaglewings! I'll have the biggest celebration ever

Gawk: oooo...can't wait!

Mckelly: No one can wait Gawk! Simone, Nina and Chelsey, the daughters of the legendary high summoner Yuna are going down(picks up a dart and throws it at a poster of Simone, Nina and Chelsey on her wall) Take that you doges! I plan to aim for their eyes...No that would give them eye patches and that's my style! No way are they stealing that!

Gawk: Ouchie, that's gonna hurt

Mckelly: Yes it is. Now let's listen to some music shall we?

Gawk:(flies around)yayyyyyyy!!!music!music!

(Mckelly goes to sphere player and plays Real emotion*The intro song from FFX-2*)

Mckelly: This is my favourite song!(starts dancing and singing to the song)What can I do for you? What can I do for you? I can hear you!

(the wall with the poster on it lifts up and a screen appears behind Mckelly dancing and the dark figures appears on it*the weird dude from the beginning*)

????: Mckelly, Mckelly!

Mckelly:(while singing and dancing)Please, not now! It's real emotion shakin' up the world, I'll forever be blessed , for you to stand by me...

????: MCKELLY!!! TURN OFF THE DAMN MUSIC!!!

Mckelly:(turns around)Aaaaahhhhhh! father? Gawk turn off the sphere player

Gawk: Yes Mckelly.(flies to sphere player and turns it off)

????: Was that Real emotion?

Mckelly: Uh...yes it was Dad

????: Anyways, I've detected a treasure in the temple of Besaid. I want you to go there and steal it.

Mckelly: Besaid? isn't that where Lady Yuna lives?

????: Yes of course

Mckelly: But...but...but-

????: But what Mckelly?

Mckelly: She'll catch me! and blast me into pieces!

????: Then, you'll have to be careful, she does have a weakness you know. And I have a feeling that treasure is the gem from those movie spheres. We'll use it for our plan understood?

Mckelly: Yes, Dad

????: Now, you should starthead there now. Do not fail me Mckelly

Mckelly: I won't father

(the screen turns off)

Mckelly:(sighs)Well, let's go

(Back on Besaid and when you walk near the stairs in the temple)

Simone: Hey uh where's my Mom?

priest: Your Mother is in the chamber of the fayth

Simone: Why?

priest: Your mother has been going there for quite a while now.

Nina: Why would she go in there?

priest: Ummm...we're uh...not sure

Chelsey: We'll ask her then

Simone: Let's go girls

(In the chamber of the fayth)

This is where my mother became a summoner and saw my father for the first time...

Simone: So, I guess we wait

Nina: I wonder if she's okay, Wakka and Lulu said she hasn't been herself

Chelsey:(looks around)Where's Dad?

Simone: I dunno. No one's said anything about him yet. Could it be that-

Nina: The door's opening!

(Door opens and Yuna steps out)

Yuna:(looks down surprised)Girls???

Nina: Mommy! we haven't seen you for like ever!

Yuna:(giggles)I know.(walks down the stairs then stands in front of the girls)Oh I've missed you three girls for soooo long. I was sooo worried about you and...Oh my gosh! Your hair! It's all messy! Have you girls been taking showers?

Chelsey: Mom don't panic, of course we've been taking showers

Nina: I take two everyday!

Simone: You wish...You smell pretty bad...

Nina: I do?(smells herself)

Yuna: Wow, you girls are growing more beautiful and I'm getting old and grey

Chelsey: Oh you're not old Mom

Yuna: Anyways, what's new with you three?

(Girls looks at each other going uhhh.... and scratching their heads)

Yuna: Well?

Simone: My band performed last week in Silverdome City!

Yuna: Really. what song?

Simone: Our newest song Taking me away!

Yuna: That's wonderful dear. What about you Nina, Chels?

Nina: Nothing really...

Chelsey: Same

Yuna: I see. Now, let's go outside shall we?(starts walking towards the door)Oh I almost forgot, I have something important to tell you girls when we go outside, okay?

Girls: Okay

(when you go to the lift)

Simone: Ummm...Mom?

Yuna: Yes,dear?

Simone: How come you were in the chamber of the fayht?

Yuna: Ummm...I'll explain later. Come on

(in great hall)

man: Lady Yuna! Are you alright?

Yuna: I'm fine thank you

Priest: Are you sure my lady? you seem tired

Yuna: Don't worry, I'm really not that tired(Walks off)

Chelsey: Wakka and Lulu were right, Mom isn't herself.

Nina: Let's just go okay? She'll probably tell us outside

Simone: Yeah wait up!

(when you go outside of the temple)

(when Yuna walks out, Wakka and Lulu come over)

Lulu: Yuna, you okay?

Yuna: Mm-hm

Wakka: Did you tell them yet?

Yuna: Not yet. But I will

Lulu: You look quite tired, Yuna. Maybe you should rest for awhile

Yuna:(yawns)I guess I am. But I'll try to fight my sleep, I wonder why I've felt so tired lately...I'll go to bed early tonight then

Wakka: That a girl. Everyone's been worried about you, You're not always this tired, ya?

Yuna: I know, it's odd. I've been sleeping so much lately, it just isn't me.

Lulu: Well take care and we'll come by later for coffee

Yuna: Okay see ya later then

(after Wakka and Lulu walk off Yuna sighs then walks off)

Simone: Hey, didn't you have something to say Mom? You were gonna tell us something

Yuna:(turns around)Ahem...Um Girls, you're probably wondering why your father isn't here. He um...He and the Aurochs won the cup and they wanted to go celebrate. All I know is that they went to Zanarkand, and never came back. They've been missing for three weeks...

Nina: [Awww...poor](#) Mom

Chelsey: So, do you think that he's-

Yuna: Dead. I'm not really sure, I've been thinking to myself if I should go find him or not but, it might be too late

Simone: We'll go find him! We'll go to Zanarkand and find Dad!

Yuna:(walks over to Simone and hugs her tight)Please sweetie, no crazy ideas. It's alright

I really felt sorry for Mom. All I wanted to do was help her out but, I felt something odd. Something about Dad missing in Zanarkand. What could possibly be going on? i wanted to know

Yuna:(let's go of Simone)So, now you know

Chelsey: Sorry...

Yuna: It's okay Chels. Sometimes you have to let it go

Nina: Let it go?

Yuna: That's right, dear

person#1: AAAHHHHHHH!Lizard men!

person#2: Lady Yuna they're trying to steal your Emerald Palo!

Simone: Lizard men? stealing? which means-

Nina: The Mcclouds!

Chelsey: What do they want with Mom's antiques?

Nina: We're about to find out! Let's go kick some butt!

(Girls run off)

Yuna: Hey! what are you three doing?

Simone: Fighting bad guys!

Yuna:(sighs)Oh boy...they're probably trying to make it up to me. I should go before it gets ugly
(when you go into the temple)

Simone: Where are you Mckelly???

priest: They went into the closet of Trials where the Emerald Palo is...

Nina: Don't worry, we'll stop them!

Chelsey:(swings daggers)Yeah, we're used to taking care of these guys!
(when you go into the trials)

Mckelly: Aaaahhhhhh!!!

Simon: What do you three want now?

Nina: We're like trying to have a life here, Quit following us!

Mckelly: I need this palo. It is useful for an evil plan...

Simone: For what?

Mckelly: Well it's really my father's plan he wants it and he told me to steal it

Chelsey: You work for your father?

Mckelly: Maybe I do so what. RUN!!!!

Gawk: let's go!!!

Simone: Hey! come back!

(back in great hall)

Mckelly: I'm no coward, I'm gonna finish you three off!

Simone: P-lease, you wish Goblin

Mckelly: It's Guado! Guado!

Nina:(giggles)Goblin!

Mckelly: Guado! GUA-DO!!!

Simone: Okay shut-up Mckelly

Mckelly: You so know so know

Simone: you so so know so know

Mckelly: you know so so know know so!

Simone: You so so know so know know so..Argh I give up!

Mckelly: Victory shall be mine! HAHAAHAAHAAHAAHHA (coughs the takes puffer) I couldn't live without this. Anywho, my father wants revenge on your mother so her sent me to steal her precious palo and use it for our plan!

Nina: Nice act of revenge Goblin

Mckelly: GUADO! How dare you insult me! I'm gonna kick all of your asses!

Simone: Try us dog!

AFTER BATTLE

Yuna: Enough!

(everyone turns to see Yuna)

Yuna: what in Spira is going on?

Nina:(points to Mckelly)She like totally started it!

Mckelly: Nuh-uh!

Yuna:(walks over)Please, give me an explanation on what is going on?

Simone: She is trying to steal your palo!

Mckelly:(hides it behind her back)No...

Chelsey: Give it back to her!

Yuna: You are not welcome here anymore, please give me my Palo and leave!

Mckelly: You're not my mother! Peace out! Mcclouds!(runs off)

Simone: Hey get back here!!!!(she and her sisters chase Mckelly)

Yuna: Girls!(sighs and shakes her head)

(outside of temple)

Mckelly: AAAHHHHHHH! get away from me!

Simone: give it back you stupid guado dog!

Mckelly: never!!!

Gawk: never! never!!!hahahahahahahah

Nick: What now boss?

Mckelly: retreat! retreat!!!

(lizard men run off and Simone speeds up and jumps on Mckelly then points her guns at her)

Simone: Give it up now or i'll shoot you right here!

Mckelly: Sure you will. I'm not falling for that! you're a stupid lying dog!

Simone: just give it back Mckelly, I have to put up with your @\$ \$ enough as it is

Mckelly: Umm...how about...NO!(kicks Simone in the stomach and runs off)

Simone: O[WWWWWWWWWWWWWW...YOU](#) dog!!!!

(Vidina and the others run over)

Vidina: You okay? she just kicked you in your stomach,ya?(helps Simone up)

Simone: GET BACK HERE MCKELLY!!!

Mckelly:(while running) You can't stop me now! HAHAAHHAHAHAH(then she bangs into a palm tree)OWWW! that hurt like a mother-

Simon: Boss! come on!

Mckelly: Oh right..ow...oh yes, HAHAAHAAHAAHAHA(then she runs towards the Mccloud airship that's hovering above the island)

Simone: No!!!Ah!!(slips on the ground and sees Mckelly on the airship flying away)

Mckelly: I can't believe it, we actually got away! Try to stop us now Chicken wings!

Gawk: Yeah! Chicken wings!!!

(Wattson brothers and the lizard men do the chicken dance)

Mckelly: Losers!!!HAHAHAHHAHHAHA...coughcough(then takes puffer)Ah...victory!tonight we are so celebrating!

(As the airship flies away, Simone is on her knees watching the ship helplessly)

Simone: Argh...Damn you Mckelly!

Vidina:(puts his hand on Simone's shoulder)Hey well you tried...Sorry Kool katt

Nina: Oh yeah, well, you're all gonna pay Mccowards! that's right i'm gonna crush all of you...(grabs a big rock and tries to fling it at the airship)Oh...I'll get you and kick your butts!

Chelsey: Wow are you that stupid?

Simone: I've dissappointed everyone...sorry, Mom is probably so upset...

(Yuna walks over)

Yuna: is everyone alright?

Osric: we're perfectly fine Lady Yuna

Vidina: yeah we're good

Yuna: Did they um, take it?

Chelsey:(speaks quietly)...yeah

Yuna:(sighs)great

Nina: we're sorry Mom!(gets on her knees and hugs Yuna's waist)Please, don't ground us! we didn't mean to screw up! I'm sure we could've caught them, please give us a chance Mother!

Yuna:(sighs)Nina, honey...It's not your fault, I'm not mad at you. I'm actually very proud of you and your sisters

Nina:(looks up at Yuna shocked)You are?

Yuna:(nods)Yes, I'm glad that you girls chased after them to get my palo back but you didn't have to. I am truly grateful that you tried to stop them...

Simone: So uh we're not grounded?

Yuna:(shakes her head)Nope, let's start heading home now, and forget about this okay?

girls: okay

Yuna:(tries to walk but after she takes a step Nina is still holding on to her)Ummm...Nina, you're still holding on to me...

Nina:(lets go)Oh sorry Mom, hehehe

My sisters and I really felt like losers after that whole thing, and I had a deep feeling that my Mother was very dissapointed in us. The Emerald palo was an anniversary gift given from Dad, and she always loved it and now it was gone. But that day she kept smiling. It was her sad smile, she tried to teach us how to smile when we were sad but we weren't as good as her. After seeing her smile, it made me more upset than ever.

(when you go out of the village, a boy runs over to Chelsey)

????: Hey! Chelsey!

Chelsey:(smiles)Sam!(runs over to him)I haven't seen you for three months!!

Sam: Man I thought you guys would never come back! I missed you

Chelsey: I missed you too...So how's it going?

Sam: Well I've been helping around town and stuff you know the usual

Chelsey: Uh-uh, hey why don't you come sphere-hunting with us? it'll be fun. You'll be able to draw lots of skecthes. You still want to be an artist right?

Sam: Uh yeah sure I'll go

Yuna: Chelsey! come on!

Chelsey: Oh, sorry Sam. I'll talk to you later. okay?

Sam: Okay, see ya!(Sam waves then runs off and Chelsey catches up to her mother and sisters)

(When you reach your house)

This is our home, it's a cottage that everyone built for Mom and Dad after their wedding as a gift. It's right by the beach on a hill, My Mom likes it here anyways she says it quiet and peaceful and the perfect place to raise a family...

(inside the house a golden retriever dog runs over)

Nina: Scruff!

Chelsey: We missed you Scruffy

(Scruff barks and the girls pet him and Scruff's tail starts to wag)

Yuna:(giggles)Scruff missed you too. He's been a good dog hasn't he? yes he's a good boy!(bends down and pets the dog)

Nina: Come on, let's go upstairs in our room!

(when you go upstairs into your room)

Nina: YAYYYYYY! my bed!(runs and jumps onto her bed)Ah...so comfy

Chelsey: It's great to be back...(lays down on her bed)

Simone: Sure is. It's felt like years being away from here and it's only been a few months

Nina:(sits up)Anywho, about the whole Dad in Zanarkand thing, what should we do? you know about Mom?

Chelsey: I know, how are we gonna make it up to her?

Nina: F.Y.I, we go to Zanarkand and go find Dad!

Simone: Hel-lo! Have you been listening? Mom said she doesn't want us to go to Zanarkand!

Chelsey: Well I have no clue what to do, but I really feel bad...

Simone: Well, let's just go outside for a bit and hang out and try to think of something...

(outside of the house)

Yava: Hey guys! over here!

(over at the crowd of teens)

Selphie: So, like did you really talk to Jake starr Kool katt?

Simone: No, he winked at me though! Oh...he's sooooo hot!

Rinoa: Come on tell us about it!

Garnet:(pushes Rinoa out of the way)Anyways, what would you do if he spoke to you and asked you out?

Simone: Like I would say yes and freak out!

(all girls scream and Vidina and his friends come over)

Osric: Man, what do you girls keep screaming about? sheesh!

Yuffie: Oh ozzy get lost!

Melanie: We're having a girl's convo here!

Vidina: Whatever y'all! Are you talking about Jake again?

Garnet: Uh duh!

Selphie: Hel-lo he's the hottest guy around!

Vidina: He's a fake, He didn't look like that before, ya?

Rinoa: You're just jealous Dine, we all know that!

Osric: Hey Vidina is right! that Jake guy can screw you over!

Leon: He don't care about girls, he just dates them then dates more girls

Zidane: Yeah, he's a player.

Seifer: What he said, I don't like him

Yuffie: Oh my god! I see Jake Starr!

Simone: What? where? where is he?

Yava: I think I'm gonna pass out!

Nina: over there!

(You see Jake is standing with his band)

Garnet: I can't believe Jake is here, on Besaid!

Melanie: Of all places!

Selphie: Come on Simone, let's go see him!

Simone: I, I dunno I mean, what if he has a girlfriend?

Rinoa: There is quite a possibility, but let's go take our chances!

Yava: Come on Simone, this is your dream moment!(pulls Simone's arm)

Simone: Alright, alright! let's go then!

Nina: yipeeee! We'll even plan your wedding!

(when you go near Jake and his band)

Melanie: There he is!

Garnet: Go on, talk to him!

Simone: WHAT???

Yava: Oh come on, don't be nervous!

(Simone takes a step forward then steps back)

Simone: no way girls, I may be a celeb too, but we have our crush probs!

Yuffie: just go! He might like you!

Simone: Alright here I go!

all of Simone's friends: SIMONE! SIMONE! WOOOOOOOOOO!!!!

(Jake spots Simone then walks over to her)

Simone:(thinking)*OH MY GOD! he's coming over!*

Jake: Hey, are you Simone from that band, the Dark Angels?

Simone: Uhhh...uh...yeah...t-that's me!

Jake: Cool, don't worry, all girls are always nervous around me. It's normal really

Simone:(nodds really fast)Yes...it...is!

Jake:(leans close)I've always wanted to meet you. You're quite different, not many girls are like you
Simone, that's what I like about you

Simone: R-really?

one of Jake's band members: Jake we gotta go, we need to practice!

Jake: Well my band and I have to bounce, well see ya later!

Simone: Bye...(after jake and the others leave)YESSSS!!!!

(while all the girls go crazy, Vidina walks home and says bye to his friends then Jake comes over)

Jake: You're Vidina the drummer of the Dark angels right?

Vidina: Yeah. What do you want?

Jake:(has a sly smile)I'd watch your back

Vidina: What the hell are you talking about?

Jake: I'm saying protect Simone, or you won't be able to save her when the time comes(then he walks off)

Vidina: I knew he was up to something! I have to go tell Simone now!

(At home, Chelsey is sitting on the couch reading and Simone and Nina come in)

Simone: Hey, where's Mom?

Chelsey:(looks up from her book)at the beach, she didn't say why though...

Nina: well let's go find out then!

(when you walk out of the house, a scene starts at Besaid beach. Yuna removes her high heels and walks into the water and looks around)

Yuna:(takes a deep breath in and out)Where are you Tidus? I miss you...huh?

(a boat appears and Tidus is standing on deck, Tidus waves to Yuna and she smiles)

Yuna: Tidus? you're alive!(runs over to the boat)

(Tidus jumps off and walks over)

Tidus: Of course, I am, Yuna(opens his arms)

Yuna:I've missed you so much!

Tidus: I missed you to Yuna

Yuna:(hugs Tidus then falls and Tidus disappears)What? What happened?(looks around)It's like, he was never here! Am I dreaming? or am I seeing things? I must be going crazy...

Nina: Mom!

Chelsey: Are you okay!

(Yuna walks out of the water over to the girls)

Yuna:...uh...yes, I am. Well, I'm quite soaked as you know, I thought I saw your father

Simone: Really? How Mom?

Yuna: Well, I was walking in the ocean and I could've sworn I saw your father's boat and he came over to hug me. As soon as I hugged him, he disappeared and I fell in the water

(lulu walks over)

Lulu: Yuna, are you alright? I saw you walking in the water and you fell...

Yuna: Yes, I know. As soon as I go home, I am going right to sleep. Oh...about the falling thing...I thought I saw Tidus...

Lulu: Really?

Yuna: Yes, and when I saw him, I felt quite odd. Like something took over me...Lulu, do you know what's going on?

Lulu: Hmmmm...I'm sorry Yuna, I don't know. But, you should go rest, that might be the solution

Yuna: Okay, I'll talk to you later!

(At home)

Simone:(whispers to Nina)I'm quite worried about Mom, she lost Dad and her palo, and is seeing things.

Nina:(whispers back)What could be going on?

(Yuna sits down in her chair in the living room and starts reading the newspaper while Chelsey is reading on the couch then there's a knock at the door)

Simone: I'll get it!(opens the door and it's Vidina)Hey Dine

Vidina: Hey, you got a minute?

(Simone walks outside and notices Vidina looks worried)

Simone: What is it Vidina?

Vidina: When Jake walked by me,je uh...told me to watch my back and protect you or I won't be able to save you when the time comes!

Simone: what?no way...you're making this up...

Vidina: No I'm not I swear I'm not! he really said that!

Simone: How do I know you're telling the truth? you could be lying to me!

Vidina: But...

(before he finishes Simone walks into her house and closes the door)

Vidina:(sighs)what's the use, she'll never believe me anyways...

(after he leaves Chelsey walks outside and looks up at the sky and notices something unusual)

Chelsey: Huh? what is that?(she notices a dark figure in the sky then it disappears, Chelsey blinks surprised then walks off)

(When you go to a group of boys picking on Sam)

boy#1: Why are you even here loner? No one likes you!

boy#2: Yeah, you're an orphan!

(boys laugh)

Sam: Why are you making fun of me? What in Spira did I do?

Boy#3: You're just a loser! you have no friends!

boy#1: Yeah, cause he likes to draw, drawing is for fags!

(boys laugh and push him around)

Sam: Hey, stop that please!

boy#2: No way you art loving sissy!

Chelsey: Stop making fun of him!

boy#3: Oh look it's the book worm!

Chelsey: Shut-up, Just leave him alone! what has he done? people like you make me sick! just get lost okay or else...

boy#1: or else what?

Chelsey: I'll get my Mom

boy#3: let's get outta here, bye losers!(the boys leave)

Sam: Chels, why did you do that? you know you don't have to stick up for me

Chelsey: You're my friend Sam. And those boys we're making fun of you, you're no loner or freak. You're a person...like everyone else

Sam: I guess...I really owe you, well let's go see what the kids are up to

Chelsey: sure, why not?(thinks about her past)

flashback

(now shows seven years ago when Chelsey and Sam first met, Tidus, Yuna and the girls are sitting in a field having a picnic)

Tidus: Come on girls! eat your food before the ants do!

Nina: But, Daddy. I don't like peanut butter and jelly.

Yuna: We have ham sandwiches Ninnie, you like those

Nina:(jumps up and down)Yayyyy!!!!

Simone: Where's Chelsey, Mommy?

Yuna: I don't know. Chelsey!

(Chelsey is watching butterflies fly all around her)

Chelsey: Yay! butterflies!(laughs)I love butterflies!

Yuna: Chelsey! Lunchtime!

Chelsey: Coming Mommy!(runs over)

Simone: what were you looking at?

Chelsey: Butterflies

Tidus: Stay close okay? you're gonna make your Mom have a heart attack

Chelsey: Hummingbird!(spots a humming bird)

Yuna: oh no...

(Chelsey chases the hummingbird and Yuna chases after her)

Yuna: Chels, come back!

(Chelsey just keeps running and a huge fiend flies down and grabs Chelsey in it's talons)

Yuna: CHELSEY!

Chelsey:(crying)MOMMY!!!

(Yuna tries to chase the fiend but she gets tired and falls to her knees, meanwhile, the fiend takes Chelsey to its nest and puts her in it then flies off)

Chelsey:(crying)MOMMY! DADDY!!!!HELP ME!

????: ssshhh be quiet, we'll die quicker if you yell!

Chelsey:(turns to a boy about her age next to her in the nest)Who are you?

????: my name's Sam. I have no idea where I am but I need to get out of here.

(the fiend comes back)

Sam: it's back!

Chelsey: we're gonna die!!!

Sam: no we're not, we just have to find another way to escape!

Chelsey: Hey birdie! leave us alone!(then Chelsey glows and she appears as a blonde girl for the moment)Go back to where you came from!!!

(the fiend flies away and Sam looks at her strangely)

Sam: No way. You never told me you were a fiend speaker

Chesley: What's a fiend speaker?

Sam: You can talk to fiends!

(Yuna, Tidus and girls run over to see the two kids in the tree)

Yuna: CHELSEY!

Chelsey: Mommy!

(Tidus opens his arms and Chelsey jumps down and Yuna grabs her and hugs her tight crying)

Yuna: are you okay???

Chelsey: I'm fine Mommy

(back to present)

Chelsey:(opens eyes and thinks)*Man, and I still can't tell them. If they found out I'm a fiend speaker, they'd never speak to me again...Mom would never look my way or even love me again...Oh well I'll tell them when time is right*

(Chelsey walks over to a crowd of little kids)

kids: Chelsey! hooray!(kids run over to her)

Chelsey:(waves and smiles)Hey guys

kid#1: Chelsey, can you play with us?

Chelsey: Sure, I'd love too(giggles)

kid#2: but before you do, can you tell us about your spear-hunting?

Chelsey:(bends down and giggles)it's not spear-hunting it's sphere hunting. Say sphere

kid#2: Sp-sp-sphere! sphere! I did it!

kid#3: yay! Chelsey, you're the best!

Chelsey:(laughs and smiles)don't mention it.(kids all gather around Chelsey and hug her while Sam walks over)

Sam: Hey miss popular

Chelsey: Oh come on Sam, the kids like you too

Sam:(nods)yeah. so, what do you guys wanna do?

kid#4:(tugs on Chelsey's skirt)Tell us about your adventures!

kid#5: Please!

Chelsey: Of course, now...where to begin...(kids sit down while Chelsey talks to the kids about her adventure)

(Yuna stands and watches Chelsey talk to the kids with Lulu and Wakka)

Yuna:(smiles)Chelsey's an angel isn't she?

Lulu: She has a way with children, you should be proud of her Yuna. She's a blessing I gotta say there should be more teens like her

Yuna:(nods)yes, she's very kind and much like-

Wakka: You

Yuna:(blinks surprised)Me?

Wakka: She does take after you, she looks so much like you and acts like you too. Like Mother like daughter ya?

Yuna: Hmmm...I guess she does. I was quiet too when I was a teenager, and very kind to children

Lulu: well we have to get going. Bye

Yuna: bye(starts walking home)

(after the kids leave, Chelsey notices Sam is looking at her funny)

Chelsey: What is it?

Sam:(blushes)Uh..it's nothing well it's getting late, bye

Chelsey: Bye Sam see ya tomorrow(starts to head home)

(when you go in the house and it's nighttime)

Simone, Nina and Chelsey: Good night Mom!

Yuna: Good night Girls! Sweet dreams!

(in the girls's bedroom)

Chelsey: Hey guys...

Simone: Yeah?

Chelsey: I really want to go to Zanarkand to save Dad, I've been thinking about it

Nina: Yeah? Any ideas?

Chelsey: I'm not sure...but I want to do it without lying to Mom

Simone: Let's just think about later, for now...Pillow fight!(throws a pillow at Nina and knocks her off her bed)

Nina: Hey!(gets back on her bed and throws a pillow at Simone)

Chelsey:(yawns)And this is what I live with(then goes to sleep)

(now after the girls sleep, you see Yuna in her bedroom turning in her bed dreaming)

(Now Yuna starts to dream)

Yuna:(wakes up in her bed in darkness and looks around scared)Where am I? And how did I get here?

Simone! Nina! Chelsey!(her voice echoes and no one answers)Where's my babies? GIRLS!!!!(still no answer)What's going on? where are they?(her bed starts to shake)Huh? AAAHHHHHHH!!!!(bed falls into the darkness, then she rises up slowly and is surrounded by pyreflies then hears a voice)

????: Yuna...It's been twenty years

Yuna:(turns around quickly but there is no one)Who's there?

????: It's me, don't you know me? I am your worst enemy

Yuna:(stomps her foot)How can you be my worst enemy if I can't even see you? Where are my daughters?

????:(laughs)Dead, like the rest of Spira. And you will die as well

Yuna: What do you mean? Show yourself!(now Yuna turns around and landscape changes)What the hell is going on? Can someone please tell me where I am?

????: No one can, everyone is dead

Yuna:(looks around and jumps back at the figure of a young man)Hih? who are you? is that you?(boy doesn't respond)Hello?

(the boy walks and now landscape is a village)

Yuna: I should follow him(runs after the boy and a girl runs over to the boy)

girl: Timothy, they're coming! to the village!

Timothy: No, they can't! They'll slaughter everyone of us!

Yuna: Slaughter?(now landscape changes to a mysterious island)What? where am I now?(glyphs start to flash in the sky and quick images of six monsters appear in Yuna's eye)What was that about?(Then she is swallowed up into darkness)AAAHHHHHHHHHHHHH!!!!!!

(Dream finally ends)

Yuna: Help!!!(wakes up and jumps up in bed)Whoa...it was only a dream. A wacko dream...(takes a deep breath)I should just go back to bed, it's just a dream after all...(she lays back in her bed and tries to go to sleep)

(in the girls's bedroom, Chelsey wakes up from a dream and looks around)

Chelsey: Oh good, it was a dream...I can't go back to sleep, might as well stay up(gets out of her bed)

(When you go outside on the wooden deck by the ocean)

Chelsey:(walks to the railing and looks at the sunrise, breathing in and out slowly, watching seagulls flying in the sky)I wish I could grow wings, spread them and fly to the clouds, and look down at the world below, over rainbows and people all waving at me and smiling...I just wish I could

Yuna: Maybe someday you will...

Chelsey: Huh?(turns around and Yuna is standing at the door smiling)Y-you're awake?

Yuna: Yep, scruff woke me up. Anyways, you're up early. Why is that?

Chelsey: Uh...I uh...had a bad dream and I couldn't go back to sleep

Yuna: I see.(walks on the deck over beside Chelsey)I had a bad dream too...It was actually pretty scary

Chelsey: Uh-huh(thinking)*Why did she have to wake up?*

Yuna:(looks up at the sky and takes a deep breath)Nice breeze, isn't it?

Chelsey: Uh-huh(looks away)

Yuna:(smiles at Chelsey then frowns)What's wrong, honey?

Chelsey: Nothing, why?

Yuna: You look upset. Is there a problem?

Chelsey:(in a quiet voice)No...

Yuna: Oh come on Chelsey you can tell me

Chelsey: Honestly Mom, there's no problem

Yuna:(holds Chelsey's hands)Chels, you know you can tell me anything

Chelsey: I know but there's nothing wrong...

Yuna: Tell me please

Chelsey:(sighs)Okay, there's a little problem

Yuna: see I told you so. Don't try to hide things young lady, I always find out. So what's bothering you,Chels?

Chelsey: Uh...I can't tell you

Yuna:(has a confused look on her face)Why?

Chelsey: I can't. It's stupid really

Yuna: A problem's a problem. I can't help you unless you tell me the problem, sweetie.

Chelsey:(sighs then looks to the sky while speaking in her usual quiet voice) Well, I've been nice to people and even helped them out but...I still end up with no friends, I'm considered weird and the "book worm". Why do I bother being nice, it's not worth it if no one's ever going to like me.

Yuna: Chelsey...Don't say that...I'm sure lots of people like you, you're a pretty girl and lots of boys probably like you

Chelsey: Yeah right, you're saying that because your my Mom

Yuna: No, the difference between you and your sisters is that they're out there, they talk to people and are very out going. But you're the opposite, you don't talk very much and you're not very out going.

You're in your room half the time...I hardly ever get to see you

Chelsey: What now you think I'm weird too?

Yuna: No of course not. How should I put this...If you want to make friends you can't be afraid to talk that's all I'm saying, you can still be yourself but just talk more even I'd like that.

Chelsey: Oh...well...it wouldn't work they think I'm weird because I like to read and write, becoming a writer is my dream but it seems that no one seems to care or think it's stupid

Yuna: Don't listen to those people you know better, I taught you to be proud of yourself, and do the things you love doing.

Chelsey:(thinking)*I can't tell her the bigger problem, she'll never talk to me for sure...she'll think I'm some evil spirit*(then Chelsey looks out into the ocean and sees a ship)Mom! Isn't that Dad's ship? The one he and the aurochs built?

Yuna: It is...Come on let's go see for ourselves!

(once you reach the beach)

Lulu: Good morning Yuna

Yuna: Good morning Lulu, so you spotted Tidus's ship too?

Wakka: Yep. Well, I hope it's his ya?

Yuna: it has to be his...it has to(looks at the dock and the ship pulls to dock)

Chelsey: Dad! Dad!

(then the aurochs come off the ship)

Jassu: Lady Yuna!

Wedge: It's good to be home

Yuna: Well, where is he?

Keepa: Oh right...Tidus was the one who convinced us to go to the Zanarkand ruins. He heard from these strange creatures known as the lizard folk who work for some group called "The Mcclouds" that something was creating some odd effects in the dome

Letty: He said: "No one messes with my old home!" And we ran onto the boat and headed for Zanarkand. He also said not to tell anyone or people would swarm around the ruins and get eaten or killed.

Datto: So we went and fiends were running out of Zanarkand like crazy, and pyreflies were swarming it too. There was way more than there really was, the Tidus ran towards the dome and he...he...

Yuna: What? he what?

Jassu: He was gone, after ten minutes of waiting he never came back out. Then a huge pair of red eyes appeared where he disappeared

Wedge: we went to go find him only to find a sphere on the ground. It's a sphere of him right before he disappeared it looks like, watch it

(Yuna turns on the sphere)

Tidus: Ahem, Yuna...I really would like to be home with you but there's something going on in Zanarkand. And I have to find out because it could be a threat and could harm lots of people if I don't do something. But if I'm not home, or if I don't live, I love you more than anything. Yuna, I'll always remember our past and the love we shared. And if the girls end up coming home, tell them that I'm sorry I didn't get a chance to see them and I love them...and that...AAAAHHHHHH!(a huge hand appears behind Tidus and the sphere turns off)

Yuna:(stands shocked and upset)He's...He's...

Keepa: Dead. The thing must've killed him. I'm sorry Yuna

Yuna: NOOOOOOOOOO!!!!!!(starts to cry)

Wedge:(walks over)Yuna, we're sorry

Yuna: Sorry? then why didn't you go and find him?

Wedge: We couldn't we didn't-(gets punched by Yuna)
(everyone gasps)

Yuna: Oh my gosh! I'm sorry, I...didn't mean to!(reaches out her hand)Here, let me help

Wedge: no, you're gonna hurt me again

Yuna: I'm so so sorry(walks away crying)

Lulu: Poor Yuna

Chelsey: We should do something for her

Wakka: Like what?

Chelsey: I...dunno(goes to walk over to Yuna but Lulu pulls her back)

Lulu: Leave her alone for a bit. Your Mother needs time to herself

Chelsey: Okay Lulu(nods)

(walk over to crowd)

Jassu: Poor Yuna

Wedge: Hey what about me? I'm the one who got punched!

Wakka: Oh stop your whining! Yuna didn't mean to. She loved Tidus very much and now he's gone. We should leave her alone until she's okay, ya?

Chelsey:(thinking)*I should make it up to Mom, but how?*

(After you walk to Yuna)

Chelsey: Um...Mom? I'm sorry about this.

Yuna: Sorry? for what?

Chelsey: I just feel guilty, I want to do something...I wanna make it up to you

Yuna: No it's okay, I'm fine dear.(sighs then hugs Chelsey)Don't worry about me, I'm just going have to face the fact that he's gone

Chelsey: But what if he's alive?

Yuna: He can't be you saw the sphere...or can he? What am I saying come on let's head home.(walks on home and Chelsey follows her)

Chelsey: But he has to be alive...I can feel it...

(Now later in the morning Simone gets out of her bed and Nina wakes too)

(When you go downstairs)

Simone: Ah, what a nice day...

Nina: Sure is, I wonder what we'll be doing today?

Chelsey:(is on the couch reading and looks up at Nina and Simone)Uh..guys, there's something I need to tell you

Simone: What? what is it?

Chelsey: Earlier this morning the Aurochs came back and they had a sphere with Dad on it. He might've been killed...

Nina: WHAT!

Chelsey: sshhhh, don't let Mom hear you. She'll get upset and start crying, everyone may think he's dead but I think he's still alive...

Simone: Well to make sure, how will we sneak out. If Mom found out though, she'd get all upset and angry because she told us not to go to Zanarkand

Yuna:(walks downstairs)So, what are you three talking about?

Simone: Uh...um...hehehe

Nina:(speaks really fast)We wanted to go to Zanarkand to rescue Dad and didn't want you to get mad

Yuna: Um, honey slow down

Nina:(speaks really slow)We wanted to go to Zanarkand...

Yuna:(sighs)I meant speak normal dear

Nina:(sighs)Fine. We wanted to go to Zanarkand to rescue Dad and didn't want you to get mad

Yuna:(sighs)Girls, I told you already you're not going. It's dangerous and you could get killed!

Simone: Mom, we're not babies anymore!

Yuna: Simone! Do not use that kind of tone with me! Do I make myself clear?(stomps her foot)

Simone: Whatever Mom(rolls her eyes)

Yuna: Excuse me? I am your mother not some carpet you can walk all over. You will listen to me and if not all of you are grounded for a year understand?

Chelsey: But...what if he's alive? I mean, I want to go see for myself...

Nina: Yeah me too. I don't want you to be sad like this if you don't have to.

Chelsey: Maybe if Dad's alive then you'll be happy again...So can we go please?

Yuna:(sighs then shakes her head)I'll think about but for now no(then she walks into kitchen)

(when you go outside Simone's communicator is on)

Yava:(on the communicator)Hey guys, wanna join us at the valley to swim? then after we'll head for the beach

Simone: Uh sure...we'll be there as soon as we can!

Yava: Okay bye Kool katt

Simone: Mom! we'll be at the beach if you need us!

Yuna: okay have fun girls.

(when you go to the valley)

Selphie: Yayyyy! they're here!

Nina: That's right!

Osric:(starts recording with a sphere camera)So, Nina why are you as dumb and preppy as a blonde?

Nina: Shut-up Ozzy! or I'll hurt you!

Yava:(laughing)Why, it's true!

Melanie: Hel-lo! I'm a blonde! Don't insult us blondes for our ways! The blonde you can insult is Mckelly!

Simone: Please even she's smarter than Nina, and she's pretty dumb

Chelsey: Can we swim now?

Zidane: Yeah, what the squirt says!

Chelsey: Don't call me that Zidane!

Vidina:(walks over to Simone)Hey, wanna race in the pond?

Simone: If you wanna lose, fine then

(Vidina and Simone get ready to dive)

Melanie: Ozzy record this!

Osric: I'm on it!

Yuffie: On your marks...get set...

Rinoa: GO!

(Simone and Vidina dive into the water)

Garnet: They are so competitive with one another. I think it's kinda cute

Nina: Yeah, those two would make such a good couple

Yuffie: Hey they're coming back! Who will be the winner?

(Simone touches first)

Simone: Yes! I won! In your face Vidina! Whohoooooooo!

Vidina: I was close too! man you're good(goes underwater then goes onto shore)

Simone:(goes beside Vidina and lays down)Remember when we were kids? we always used to pretend we were sphere hunters?

Vidina: Yeah, and we would have sticks as swords and staves and pretended we were fighting fiends. And we played "Sin" as well

Simone:(laughs)We would be my Mom and her guardians and your Dad would be Sin

(Simone and Vidina laugh)

Vidina: Yeah. Good times back then

Simone: Yeah. we were young without a care in the world, I wish it was still like that now

(Vidina and Simone look at each other for a long time then hear laughing)

Vidina: What's so funny ya?

Nina: Simone and Vidina kissing in a tree, K-I-S-S-I-N-G!

Simone: It was nothing like that!

Chelsey: Okay lovebirds let's go to the beach!

I remember staring at Vidina and him staring at me. I didn't realize it then, but now I realize that I felt kinda odd, it was a hurting feeling but yet wonderful...

(at the beach)

Chelsey:(looks around and spots Sam drawing in his sketch book)Hey Sam!

Sam:(looks up from his sketch book)Oh hey Chels, I was just drawing sketches

Chelsey: We're going swimming. Wanna come with me?

Sam: uh...sure why not?

Chelsey:(laughs and grabs Sam's hand)Well let's go!(then they both run to the beach)

Osric:(records a bunch of girls swimming)Oh yeah, look at all the ladies! oh yeah! whoa she's too aneroxic looking, she's too fat, she's hot!(Nina stands in front of the camera)AAAHHHH you're in the way

Nina!

Nina: Excuse me? you are not recording good-looking girls...without me in the video!

Vidina: Hey you guys wanna play Beach volley ball with the Blitzball?

Yuffie: count me in!

Simone: me too!

Selphie: don't forget me!

(in the water Simone and the others are playing beach volley ball laughing while in the sky a dark figure zips by and flies towards the beach. It dives into the water. Kids run around with their parents by the water then there's a huge splash)

person: Oh my gosh! look out!

(everybody runs and screams as a huge dark creature comes out of the water and flies around screeching)

Simone: What the hell is that?

(A glyph shines on the creatures belly)

Melanie: Who cares! let's get the hell outta here!

Yava: Look out!

(Everybody ducks as the creature swoops down)

Simone: it's messing with thw wrong people!

Vidina: Yeah, hey birdie! take this!(throws his blitzball but the creature bites it and it pops)NOOOO MY BLITZBALL!

Simone: Vidina, come on!

(girls and their friends run from the fiend)

Garnet: Is that a fiend?

Sam: I think it's something else...something that we've never heard of

Chelsey: What do you mean?

Simone: who cares. No creature is gonna harm anybody!(stands waving her arms)Hey come and get me chicken!

Vidina: Simone! what are you doing? Are you crazy?

Simone: Yes I am. Crazy is my middle name!

(the creature swoops down and Simone jumps up and hangs on to it's talons)

Vidina: SIMONE!!!!

(back in besaid in Lulu's house)

Lulu:(sitting on the couch with Wakka and Yuna drinking coffee)So, you're feeling better about earlier?

Yuna:(takes a sip of her coffee)Yes, I am feeling a bit better.

Lulu: Are the girls taking it hard?

Yuna:(swallows hard)Well...They wanted to go to Zanarkand to save him, they think he's still alive and... (from outside people are running around screaming)

Wakka: whoa what's with all the noise, ya? somethin's going on and it can't be good

Yuna: Let's go see then(walks out of Lulu's house with Wakka and Lulu)Excuse me? what is going on?

person: There's a strange fiend at the beach! It's attacking everyone!

Yuna:(pulls out her staff)Don't worry I'll...wait the girls are at the beach. OH MY GOD! GIRLS!!!!(runs off)

Wakka: I knew she'd do that(runs off with Lulu following Yuna)

(After Yuna, Lulu and Wakka arrive at beach)

Yuna: GIRLS!!!!

Nina:(turns around)Mom? what are you doing here?

Yuna: I'm here to stop the fiend! where's your sister?

Chelsey: Uh...Mom, whatever you do don't panoc

Yuna: Why?(grips her staff)

Nina:(giggles nervously)She uh...is fighting with that fiend and...

(you hear Simone screaming in the sky)

Yuna: SIMONE!!!!

(Now you see Simone on the creature's back and Simone tries to hit it but the creature starts freaking out causing Simone to fall off it and she falls into the valley)

Simone:(jumps up from the ground and the creature starts chasing her)Get away from me you bastard!

(Now you see Simone hiding behind a tree shaking and the creature is right beside it and then the creature spots her and attacks her by slashing at her arm. Simone screams then shoots at it with her guns, the creature screeches then starts to fly in the sky heading towards the village and Simone falls to the ground holding her wounded arm, then later you see Yuna and the others running over)

Yuna: Simone! Are you okay?(runs to Simone and hugs her)

Simone: Yeah, I'm fine...Mom(flinchs in pain)Ow

Yuna:(looks at Simone's bleeding arm)You're hurt! It really scratched you...

Simone: Yeah it did. Ow!

Yuna: Stop moving, we're going home, I can fix that wound

Simone: No! I'm not going home!

Yuna: Oh yes you are young lady, there is no way you're fighting that thing again! you're badly hurt!

Simone: I don't care if I'm hurt, if that monster reaches the village...It'll kill everyone! I have to stop it!

Yuna:(grabs Simone's other arm)Come on, let's go home!

Simone:(pulls away)No, Mom. Just because you're afraid of fighting it doesn't mean I should be

Yuna: I'm not afraid! I just don't want you to get killed! And don't talk to me that way, Understand? we're going home and that's final!

Simone: No! I'm going to fight it. You're not going to stop me!

Yuna: Excuse me? I am your mother and you'll do as I say

Simone: I'm not a baby anymore!

Yuna: I know that. I just don't want you to do crazy things and act like...like...

Simone: Like my father right?

Yuna:(sighs)Yes, I don't want to lose you. Not like your father. Now, let's go home and fix that wound

Simone:(after a moment)No!(takes off)

Yuna: Simone! Get back here now! if you don't get back here this instant you're grounded for a month!

Simone: Like I care!

Nina:(looks over at Chelsey)think we should help her?

Chelsey:(shrugs)I dunno. we'll get in alot of trouble

Nina: So what. Let's save Besaid! Come on!(takes off)

Chelsey:(sighs)Oh what the hell...Hey wait up!(runs after her sister)

Yuna: Hey! Nina and Chelsey! get back here now! That's it all of you are grounded for a year!(sighs)Oh what's the use...

(Meanwhile Simone is running towards the village)

Simone: I'm almost there, nobody messes with my home!

Nina+Chelsey: Simone! wait up!

Simone: Nina? Chelsey? why are you guys following me?

Chelsey:(swings her daggers)We wanted to help

Nina:(takes out her whip)Yeah and take down that monster! we are sisters after all and we stick together no matter what!

Simone:(nods and smiles then grabs her two guns)Yeah, let's rock and roll!

(when you reach the village, the creature is on top of the Besaid temple screeching then jumps down

and stomps towards the girls)

Simone: Alright girls, time to fight!

AFTER BATTLE

Nina: that was kinda easy...I guess

(the creature starts to act all dizzy and starts to fall)

Simone: LOOK OUT!!!

(the girls scream and run but creature falls on them then everyone in the village gasps)

Yuna:(runs over and panics)MY BABIES!

Lulu: Oh no

(then the creature explodes into pyreflies and a dark looking spirit comes out of it and the girls get up)

Chelsey: Guys! look!

(the spirit starts moving all around then dives down into a hole in the ground)

Simone: Okay...what just happened?

Yuna: Are you three okay?(hugs the girls tight)I was so worried

Nina: Mom let go of us!

Simone: Can't...breathe!

Yuna:(let's go of the girls)I'm so glad you're okay. What were you three thinking?

Wakka: Since when do you three know how to fight?

Nina: Uh, F.Y.I Wakka, we're sphere hunters, we fight all the time

Lulu: You girls have proven yourselves. Maybe your mother won't have to worry about you anymore

Simone: Can't wait for that to happen

Chelsey: Uh...guys. There's a hole over there by the temple!

(when you go over to the hole)

Nina:(yells down the hole)Hello? *Hello? Hello?* Anybody home? *Anybody home? Anybody home?* Wow my voice echoes!

Simone: I wonder what's down there? hmmm

Nina: Why don't we go down there and see?

Simone: You first!

Nina:(shivers)I didn't mean it you know!

Yuna:(walks over and kneels in front of the hole)Hmmm. Why would there be a hole here?

Chelsey: Maybe that's where that monster came from. But then everyone would've noticed it...

Simone: Maybe it just created it and we didn't notice, and it went back down

Lulu: I wonder where it leads to...

Osric: Maybe it leads to...the Underworld!

Melanie: Oh no! Anything but that!

Osric: Maybe it's a sign that the Apocalypse is coming...Muahahahahahaha!

Yava: Shut-up, you're scaring us!

Nina: so, guys. Did you figure out the "hole" thing out yet?(laughs and everyone stares at her)

Chelsey:(rolls her eyes)that precisely was not humorous

Nina: Oh man...

Yuna: Hmmm. From what I know, those holes that used to be in the chambers of the fayth led to the Farplane abyss. But, I don't know about other holes...

Nina: Whatever it is...I don't want to be around when all of those things come out of there

(then a hooded boy speaks out of nowhere)

?????: From what I've heard, from myths and tall tales, what lies down there is the land of the dead: The Underworld.(everyone looks at him funny)

Yuna: Who are you?

????:(humbly bows)Oh my apologies, I am Suka. I study myths and stories, and this story is what I'm fascinated in.

Yuna: Well Suka, the Farplane is the land of the dead, isn't it?

Suka: It is my lady. But the Underworld and the Farplane are connected...somehow...I'm not sure

Chelsey: So what you're saying is that the Underworld actually exists?

Suka: I'm not saying it does. But from people's beliefs the Underworld is the deepest and darkest part of the Farplane that can never be reached

Chelsey: Maybe this hole is the secret entrance to the Underworld. But why are creatures coming out of there? Like the one we saw?

Suka: From what I gather...the creatures that inhabit the Underworld are the most fouliest of the dead. They hold more hatred than fiends and are pure evil. They are known to be Shadows, once human but when dead, their hate and anger live and create a shadow. That creature we saw could've been a shadow

Yuna: How are you sure?

Suka: I'm not sure. But, shadows are vulnerable to light from what I know. Then again, there is so much we don't know. Maybe this is a sign that the shadows are planning an attack...planning to destroy all living things. And that shadow was a spy. Maybe there are some shadows that can withstand light...Hmmm so much to ponder

(then you see Sam looking as if he knows something...)

Chelsey: I thought the Underworld was some joke to scare little kids. But if you think about it...it could exist which means...

Suka: Spira could be in danger(then Suka walks off and disappears)

Yuna: We have to block this hole at once! We don't want anyone falling in or anything coming out!

Wakka: Right! I'll round up the Aurochs!

Lulu: I'll go with you, but who's going to watch the hole?

Nina: Not me!

Melanie: So not me!

Simone: let's pull straws and see!

(After, Chelsey pulls out the smaller straw)

Osric: Looks like you have to Chelsey!

Chelsey: Great...just my luck

Yava: Come on, let's get outta here!

(the others take off)

Chelsey:(sits by the hole thinking)*I'm so curious, I want to know what's down there, to see if Spira's most terrifying secrets are just down this hole*

Sam:(walks over)Hey, Chels. Why are you sitting here?

Chelsey: I'm watching the hole.(looks down then spots a pair of red eyes then jerks back)Whoa! did you see that?

Sam: No, I didn't. Why?

Chelsey: I just saw a pair of red eyes! Wait...didn't the Aurochs mention seeing a pair of red eyes at the Zanarkand dome??? Hmmm...

Sam: What are you talking about?

Chelsey: It all makes sense! Sam, that creature in Zanarkand is a shadow! I got to tell the others when they come back!

Sam: Uh...Sure...(has a worried look on his face)

(Wakka comes over with the Aurochs with a bunch of tools)

Wakka: You guys can go now, let's block this hole boys!

Simone: I just hope this Shadow attack doesn't happen while I'm around

Nina: I hope it doesn't happen period!

woman: Help! someone! my daughter's missing!

Simone: Come on guys! let's go see what's wrong

(when you go to woman)

Vidina: What's wrong?

woman: My daughter, Keira...she's missing!

Chelsey: Oh no! Keira! I know her!

woman: She disappeared after my husband and I were arguing. I guess she thought we were getting a divorce and ran away

Chelsey: Don't worry, we'll find her!

Yava: We will? we have bigger problems Chels!

Chelsey: Can't we at least look for her? Please

Simone: Oh fine. Let's go, but where could she be?

Vidina: We'll check the village you check the valley

Nina: Okay!

Simone: First a shadow now a missing girl...what's next?

(Simone, Nina and Chelsey take off)

When I heard about the shadows and the Underworld, of course I was afraid. That maybe Spira's next terror was just beneath our feet...And I somehow felt that the Shadows and Zanarkand were connected

(When you arrive at the secret cave*the secret cave in FFX-2*)

Chelsey: Let's go in here. She's gotta be in here!

(go through the cave till you spot two paths)

Simone: Just great. What path do we take?

Nina: Umm...eeny meeny miny moe...touch the tiger by the toe, if he hollars let him go...eeny meeny miny moe!(points to the left path)That one!

Chelsey: Come on! Keira! Keira! where are you?

Simone: Keira! Keira!

Nina: here kitty, kitty, kitty!

Chelsey: Uh...Nina. Keira's a human, not a cat

Nina: Oh...sorry

(when you reach a certain point)

Simone: Hmmm where could she be?

Nina:(paces back and forth then falls through the ground)AAAAHHHHHHH!!!! SIMONE! CHELSEY!!!

Simone: Nina!(She and Chelsey jump down after Nina and land in a secret lair under the cave)

Nina:(gets up and wipes the dust off her skirt)Phew. Good thing I landed on my feet...oh man my skirt is all dirty!

Chelsey:(spots Keira and runs over)Keira! Are you okay?

Keira: Chelsey, why did you come and find me?

Chelsey:(kneels down in front of Keira)Your parents are worried about you. We're here to bring you home

Keira:(screams)Look out! behind you! it's the monster!

Chelsey: Monster? Guys! look out!

(a weird shadowy dragon comes out from behind the stone walls)

Simone: What is that?

(a glyph shines on the dragon's belly)

Nina: could it be another shadow?

Simone: Who knows, let's fight it!

Chelsey: Keira stay back, we're gonna fight the monster!

AFTER BATTLE

(the shadow dragon vanishes and it's spirit goes down a hole in the ground)

Nina: Another hole?

Chelsey: It was a shadow, like the other one. We have to block this hole!

Nina: that Suka guy was right! we're doomed!

Simone: Not if we stop them!

Chelsey: Come on let's get outta here. Come on Keira!

(After you arrive at the village)

Keira:(runs to her parents)Mommy! Daddy!

woman: Keira!(hugs her daughter)Thank goodness you're okay. Thank you so much girls

(Girls just stand there whistling)

Wakka: Wow, you three are born fighters. You girls have really changed over those few months, ya?
You guys are startin' to become as famous as your Mom!

Nina:(giggles)I guess we have changed a bit

Chelsey: Oh, and there was another shadow! But we fought it off

Vidina: Another shadow???

Simone: Yeah. I hope those two are the only ones we fight

Vidina: Me too. Spira could be in trouble if there's more

Yuna: So, you saw another Shadow?

Nina: Yeah. Except this one looked like a dragon. You should've saw us Mom! it didn't stand a chance against us!

Simone: And what I noticed was that both of the shadows had a glyph on thir bellies. Could it mean something?

Yuna: I don't know. But we should keep our eyes peeled and stay on a look out just incase more shows up

Chelsey: Oh! I almost forgot, when I looked down the first hole I saw a huge pair of red eyes. Wsn't there a huge pair of eyes oin Zanarkand that the Aurochs saw?

Simone: So you're saying that...

Chelsey: That creature in Zanarkand must be a shadow! we have to stop it! Mom, please can we go to Zanarkand! We fought the other shadows we can take on this one!!! Please!

Yuna:(thinks for a moment then sighs)Well...you three seem to have no problem fighting...Okay you can go.

girls: YAYYYYYYY

Yuna: Oh and Simone, your father wanted to give this to you...he was going to when he came back...I guess I should give it to you now. I know how much you've always wanted a sword of your own...Use it well

Simone:(takes the sword from her mother)Gee thanks Mom

Yuna: Well, you should get ready. Come on, let's go home
(At home)

Chelsey: Well I'm done packing does everyone else know?

Simone: Yeah, I called them a while ago...Well, we're about to see if Dad's alive.

Nina: Yeah...I can tell this is going to be one hell of a journey!

Simone: Well, let's go then

(outside at the docks)

Selphie:(hugs Simone)Oh we're gonna miss you soooo much Kool katt

Simone: Hey I'll miss you too Selphie

Yuffie: Take care alright!

Garnet: And give that shadow a can of whoop @\$\$!

Nina: Don't worry we will Garnet!

Vidina: Bye Mom, bye Dad

Wakka: Bye son(pats Vidina's shoulder)

Lulu: Bye(hugs Vidina)

Yuna: Bye girls!

Nina: Bye Mom! Don't worry we'll be back!

Simone: Yeah, bye!

Chelsey: And we'll bring Dad home! Come on Sam!

Sam: Coming! Bye Lady Yuna!

Yuna: Okay see ya!

(Now you see the girls and their friends waving from the phoenix then it flies off and Yuna takes one last look then walks home)

(In the phoenix)

Vidina: Alright! Now on to Zanarkand!

Osric: Hey, why's Sam here?

Chelsey: He's gonna help us on our journey!

Vidina: of course the more the merrier! next stop Zanarkand Ruins!

Nina: Let's stomp that shadow and save Dad!

(After arriving in Zanarkand)

This is the Zanarkand Ruins. A city that was destroyed by Sin a thousand years ago. Dad came from one thousand years ago because of Sin and met Mom. Infact, if he was never sent into the future, he would've never met my Mom and my sisters and I would've never been born

Nina: Now let's go find Dad! he's in the dome!

Suka: Be careful in there, it's much more dangerous than it seems

Chelsey: Oh...it's you again...

Suka: I came only to warn you, nothing else. Be careful my friends...(then Suka walks off)

Nina: I swear that kid is freak-y!

Simone: Come on!

(After you arrive at a certain point)

Chelsey:(spots Issaru lying on the ground)Hey, isn't that Isaaru?

Nina: It is! he looks injured, let's help him out!

(Girls run over to Isaaru)

Isaaru is a former summoner. He met my mother during her pilgrimage when he was a summoner. Mom told us we should trust him because she and Isaaru are kind of good friends. I've seen him in Besaid quite a few times to visit her

Simone: Are you okay?

Isaaru: Yes, I'm fine. But that monster, I saw it with Tidus and I tried to save him but...the monster attacked me and dragged me out here. That thing is somehow creating odd effects in the dome, there's swarms of pyreflies, and even fiends flee from this creature...

Nina: Um...Just one question. Is our Dad alive?

Isaaru: Yes...he is but he won't be for long

Chelsey:(blinks surprised)I was right. Come on, let's stop that monster before it kills Dad

Simone: Yeah, we'll come right back for you Isaaru, We have to save our Dad!

Isaaru: Be careful girls, it's dangerous

Nina: Hey don't worry about us!(she and her sisters run into the dome)

(when you're half-way through the dome)

Chelsey: Wow...check it out. There's so many pyreflies.

Simone: Wasn't there always lots of pyreflies here?

Chelsey: Yes, but not this much! and fiends fleeing? this shadow must be more dangerous than the other two we fought

Nina: Well let's find Dad quick because I find this place a little scary hehehe

Simone: Alright then

(when you reach the chamber of the fayth*where you first talk to Yunalesca in FFX*And there is a hole in the center of it)

Chelsey: Another hole! that's three we saw now!

Simone: must've been opened by the Shadow that's here

Nina: So where's Dad?

(then the girls hear a loud roar)

Chelsey: He's up there! come on!

(go up the stairs and arrive at the Beyond*where you fought Yunalesca in FFX*and the shadow is there)

Simone: Bring it on Shadow!

AFTER BATLLE

(the spirit of the shadow flies into the hole in the chamber of the fayth)

Chelsey: Phew. It's finally gone, how many more shadows will we have to fight?

(then Simone spots Tidus lying on the ground)

Simone: Dad!(runs over)Dad, are you okay?

(the girls crowd around him)

Chelsey: Come on Dad, wake up!

Tidus:(wakes up slowly)...Whoa! who are you three?

Nina: Uh...Dad it's us! Hel-lo!(waves her hand in Tidus's face)

Tidus:(sits up)Simone, Nina, Chelsey? wow, sorry about that. I passed out for a while you see and well, I'm tired...Oh no! the monster! you three have to get out of here, or it'll kill you!(stands up and draws his sword)

Simone: Dad, we already killed it

Tidus: Did you really? whoa. You girls have gotten stronger from sphere hunting. And your old man has gotten old and has old weak bones(laughs)

Chelsey:(giggles)Dad!

Tidus: Is your mother here too?

Chelsey: Nope. She's at home, worried sick about you

Tidus: You guys went home? Oh man, I'm sorry I wasn't there. I ahve no way of getting home 'cause the Aurochs took off

Simone: You can go on our ship! we have plenty of room!

Nina: Yeah, and we'll take you home to Mom. She'll be so happy to see that you're alive

Tidus: I can't wait to see her

(Isaaru walks over)

Chelsey: Hey, Isaaru!

Isaaru: I see you fought that monster. Good job girls. You okay Tidus?

Tidus: of course. Are you okay Isaaru?

Isaaru: I'm fine. You should start heading home now, Yuna is waiting for you

Tidus: Yeah, you're right. Alright girls, take me home on your ship

Simone: follow us! Bye Isaaru!

Isaaru: Good bye

(then Simone turns on her communicator)

Simone: Hey Eaglewings this is Kool katt we found my Dad!

Vidina: Good then. We'll be right there!

Simone: okay over and out!

(then in a few minutes the phoenix lands in front of the girls and Tidus and all four of them go in it)

(Now on the deck)

Tidus: Wow, this ship is cool

Simone: it sure is Dad. So, can you tell us about the past?

Nina: We love the stories about you and Mom. they're soooo romantic

Chelsey: Tell us how you met! it's cute!

Tidus: Well, of course as you know Sin brought me here to Spira and I first met you Aunt Rikku in the Underwater ruins. Then we started talking after she took me on her ship. But then Sin attacked it and I fell off and woke up near the shore of Besaid where I met Wakka. Later on, I find out that the apprentice summoner hasn't returned from the trials. So I overreacted and went through the trials and in the chamber of the fayth and met Lulu and Kimahri. Then your mother came out the door ready to fall on her face but luckily Kimahri caught her on time. That night...your mother and I spoke for the first time

Nina: [Awww...how](#) cute. if you think about it...if you never got sent to Spira by Sin or get knocked off the boat you would've never met Mom. And we'd never exist...

Simone: Oh, we're home, make sure to tell Mom we have stuff to do. Ready Dad?

Tidus: of course I am(jumps off the phoenix into the water and swims towards the shore of Besaid whistling)

Wakka:(looks to see Tidus swimming towards the shore whistling)Tidus! you're back! I can't believe you're alive!

Tidus:(finally walks out of the water)Well,I am(high fives with Wakka)Where's Yuna?

(Everyone from Besaid gathers around Tidus then he whistles for Yuna then he hears a whistle and turns around to see Yuna running towards him)

Yuna: Tidus!

Tidus: Yuna!

(Tidus and Yuna run towards each other and hug then everyone goes awwwww)

Yuna: You're alive, I thought you were dead

Tidus: Do I look dead to you?

Yuna:(looks up at Tidus and smiles)No...of course not, I'm just glad you're home. I was so worried about you. Come on, let's go home and I'll fix you breakfast. You must be hungry

Tidus: I am hungry.(strokes Yuna's hair)I'm glad to finally be home

Yuna:(nods then leans her head against Tidus's shoulder)I love you

Tidus: I love you,too.

(Tidus and Yuna kiss and then Nina yells in the speaker on the phoenix)

Nina: Mom, Dad! get a room!

(Tidus and Yuna look up and wave while laughing)

Simone: Good bye!

Chelsey: We'll be back soon! we have stuff to do!

(then the phoenix takes off)

Tidus: They said they had stuff to do. But they'll come home as soon as they can

Yuna:(nods)Okay, as long as they come home.(holds Tidus's hand as they walk home)

(Now on the phoenix when you go to the bridge)

Osric: Hey you guys, we're getting incoming data from the commsphere network!

Simone: From who?

Osric: It's from Jasmyn, I guess it's real important. Yava, hook up to the commsphere network

Yava:(on the other computer)Righto Ozzy!

(Now on the commsphere network and Jasmyn is sitting in front of the screen)

Simone: Hey Jasmyn!

Jasmyn: Oh good, I reached you guys. I found this sphere in the cavern of the stolen fayth a little while ago and I think you should take a look at it

Simone: Okay, hook it up to the commsphere

(now you see a strange cavern with glyphs all over the walls and a huge statue is on a platform with a gem in the center of it)

Simone: look, it's a gem! could it be the one Timothy created?

Melanie: That place looks freaky. I wonder where it is

(sphere turns off)

Jasmyn: I have no clue what that thing is or where it is but it looks powerful

Nina: Hey wait, that gem looks so much similar to the one Mom had. And the Mcclouds stole it! But why?

Vidina: Beats me. You never know what those losers are up to. Jasmyn, do you know where Mccloud HQ is?

Jasmyn: Yes we do. My troop will distract them from outside their fortress and you can sneak in and find the gem! I'll give you the coordinates we'll meet you there

Simone: Okay bye Jasmyn!(the commsphere network turns off)

Vidina: Alright Eaglewings! it's bustin' time!

(After you go inside HQ and while Jasmyn and the Black cobras are distracting the Mcclouds)

Nina: Should we split up?

Simone: No stay close, wherever the palo is it'll be in a heavily guarded room

Chelsey: let's hope we don't run into Mckelly or the Wattson brothers!

Simone: Alright let's search!

(when you go in a room and Simone's communicator turns on)

Vidina: Hey! can you hear me?

Simone: Vidina! not so loud!

Vidina: Turn the volume down then!

(then a lizard brute comes in)

lizard: Hey! who's in there?

Nina: Duck!

(the girls duck down and crawl under a table and another lizard brute comes in)

lizard#2: Uh...you heard something?

lizard: Yeah, it sounded like a girl

lizard#2: A girl? are you on crack! it's not like those three brats are gonna sneak in here! come on, the boss'll get mad if we don't fight off those Black cobras!

(the lizard brutes run out)

Chelsey: Phew. I thought they'd spot us for sure!

Simone: Yeah(crawls out from under the table)I hope the Black cobras are alright

(then Simone's communicator turns on again)

Jasmyn: Did you find the gem yet?

Simone: No, but I'm sure it's close by. Are you guys alright?

Jasmyn: Yes, we're fine. Oh, and just to let you know some of the mcclouds are inside

Nina: We already saw two of them already. But we'll be fine

Jasmyn: Okay, when you guys find the palo run!!!

Simone: Roger, let's go!

(when you find a room with the palo in a big glass container)

Chelsey: This must be it! where's all of the guards and lasers?

Simone: Maybe there is none, but there might be an alarm that'll set off if you lift the container.(then she notices a laptop)Look a laptop. Maybe there's a code that they use, but what would it be?

Nina: Grrreat. How do we get the code?

Chelsey: Maybe Yava would know. She's an expert at hacking into programs. Then she can find out the code!

Nina: Good plan! I like it!

Simone:(turns on her communicator)Warrior chick, are you there? this is Kool katt

Yava: What do you need Kool katt?

Simone: Could you find a lap top and hack into it? we need the code that'll open this container and shut-off the alarms!

Yava: Alright I'm on it! I already found a laptop...let's see...I'm almost there...the code is...Chunky monkey? wow these people are lame asses

Simone: Okay...I'll type it in(types in the code and the container opens)Got ti! thanks Yav!

Yava: No prob, over and out

Nina: Now let's get the heck outta here!

(when you go into the corridor on the third floor)

Simon: Hey! how did you get the palo?

Charlie: and how did you find out the code?

Nina: Now that's our secret! And what kind of a code is Chunky monkey? that is like soooo lame!

Charlie:(sighs)It was bosses's idea, Chunky monkey is her favourite kind of icecream twister at Twistee treat.

Nick:(points his gun at the girls)Give us the palo, ladies!

Simone: Sorry, it's ours now.(takes out her sword that Yuna gave her)If you want it, you'll have to beat us!

Simon: Oh, now it's on! prepare to lose, Chickenwings!

AFTER BATTLE

Nick: Damn! the girls always beat us fair and square!

Nina: that's cause you boys are messing with the wrong girls and...Oh my god! my hair is messed up!!!

Chelsey:(shakes her head)Nina, there is wayyy more important things going on right now besides your hair being messy!

Simone: Come on, let's get outta here!

Simon: Boys, let's tell the boss and sound the alarm. They're not getting away this time!

Simone: sheesh that's what you always say!

(the wattson brothers run off then the alarm goes off, the girls find a vent and crawl in it)

Nina: I hate this! My hands hurt and my hair is soooo messy!!!

Simone: Well, it's the only way we have. The alarm has been set off.

Chelsey: We're almost there...

Nina: Hey! let's see what's through this vent!

Simone: Shhhh! be quiet!

(the girls look out through the vent and they look in Mckelly's room)

Chelsey: Hey, is that a huge poster of us on her wall?

Nina: oh my gish! it is! But why would she have a huge poster of us?

Simone: to throw darts at(points to the darts on the poster)

Nina:(gulps)She really hate us...

Simone: No really?

Mckelly: I can't believe those three idiots snuck in here. And those Black buffoons are on their side!(throws a dart at the poster)They'll pay one of these days. My father and I will rule Spira...Muahahahahahhahahaha coughcough(takes puffer)Ah, yes...evil will reign!

Nina: she like honestly needs therapy

Simone: No you think?

(now the wall with the big poster of the girls lifts up showing a screen with Mckelly's father)

????: Mckelly Deminah Guado, did you steal the palo from Besaid?

Mckelly: Yes, father. But...um...there's a little itsy bitsy problem...

????: What?

Mckelly: You know Yuna's daughters...they broke into my HQ and stole it back! But luckily they haven't escaped yet, I can still stop them

????: Mckelly! you know we need that palo for our plans! You better stop them or you'll never be able to see them or Spira suffer. Don't you want to rule Spira? I have had dreams, visions, and I have seen Spira in total oblivion and I sat on the throne with you beside me. My god has spoken...that time is soon you see. I will not disappoint the king of darkness, Lord of the Shadows, bringer of death. And he has also sent me another vision...

Mckelly: About what Father?

????: I have seen those three brats dead and their mother was sitting next to my throne. My guess is that she'll betray Spira and rule the darkness with me. But how? I must seek answers, she is to be the queen of darkness if that is what my god wants.

Mckelly: I thought you hated Lady Yuna!

????: I do. But if she doesn't become my queen, she will suffer the most pain than anyone else.

Muahahahahhahahaha Now go get that palo!

Mckelly: Yes...father

(screen turns off and Mckelly walks out)

Nina: Was that Mckelly's father? he's so evil! He's gonna make Mom betray us!(shakes her head)No...he can't. Mom would never betray us...would she?

Chelsey: We have to stop Mckelly's father! he's the real villian! he's just making Mckelly do these evil things. How...mean...how upsetting to have a father like that. I actually feel sorry for her...

Simone: How could you feel sorry for that mother-

(the vent opens and the girls fall out and land on top of each other)

Mckelly:(runs in)Hey! how did you three get in here? give me my palo!

Simone: Why don't you get it yourself Goblin?

Mckelly: it's GUADO!!! anywho, you'll regret calling me that!

AFTER BATTLE

Mckelly: You might win now but when Spira is done for, you'll be sorry!(throws a grenade and runs off)

Chelsey: Hey! she stole the palo!

Simone: No she didn't, I have it right...wait where is it?

Nina: That Guado dog! She did steal it! that's it, we're kicking that eye patch freak's @\$\$!

(Simone's communicator turns on)

Jasmyn: Simone! Nina! Chelsey! you have to get out of there!

Nina: Why?

Jasmyn: Someone in the HQ set the whole place on self-destruction, if you don't get out on time you'll die!

Chelsey: Come on guys! we have to get out of here!

Simone: But the palo! we lost it!

Jasmyn: You don't have time! get out!!!

Chelsey:(sighs)we have no choice

(After you escape the HQ)

Vidina: Over here!(waves on the phoenix deck)

(Simone and the girls jump onto the ship and it takes off as the entire Mccloud HQ explodes)

Vidina: Whoa, that was close. Did you guys get the palo?

Simone: We had it but that dumbass Mckelly stole it

Vidina: Don't worry we'll get her. As long as everyone's okay

Sam:(stares at the blown up HQ)whoa, is sphere-hunting always this exciting?

Chelsey: trust me, you haven't see anything yet

(then the Mccloud airship flies right next to the phoenix and Jasmyn is standing on her ship's deck waving at the Eaglewings)

Jasmyn: Well I gotta get going. Some of our troops are badly wounded but if you need help...

Osric: We'll be calling!

Jasmyn: Right...Well good luck!!!

Simone: You too!(then watches the Black cobra airship take off ahead)

So much was going on, this adventure was going to be tough. Now that we know about the shadows, and Mckelly's father's evil plan, we had to prepare ourselves to save Spira. And expect the unexpected, I just hoped that we'd succeed or Spira was in for a rough ride!

CHAPTER TWO IS COMPLETE!

4 - chapter three

(Now it's night time and Simone is on the deck of the Phoenix staring at the moon then Vidina comes out onto the deck)

Vidina: Hey Kool katt

Simone:(turns around and smiles)Hey there Dine. What's up?

Vidina: Nothing much, just came to see what you were up to.(walks over beside Simone)It's so...nice up here

Simone: Enjoying the view?

Vidina: Yeah, you could say that. I've been thinking...about the whole shadow thing, I wonder what would happen if they were all to rise...how would they anyway?

Simone: From what I know, I heard Mckelly talking to her father on this huge screen in her room. Her father had mentioned something about having visions from his god...

Vidina: His god?

Simone: Yeah. And her said that the palo would help him bring the shadows into our world and total darkness. Not only that, he said that he'd make my mother rule Spira with him

Vidina: No way! He can't do that! Lady Yuna is the reason Spira is free of sorrow! If she were to become evil...we'd be doomed! we gotta stop that jerk!

Simone: Yeah, but how? where is he hiding? and what about the palo, isn't it supposed to destroy the shadows?

Sam: That's because there's another one.

(Simone and Vidina turn around)

Vidina: Were you here the whole time?

Sam: Almost. I know a bit about the Underworld and the palo you're talking about. The one that Lady Yuna has is a dud. The palo that can bring the shadows into Spira is hidden somewhere where no one knows about. Mckelly and her father also have no clue about that palo and if they did...they'd do anything to steal it. We have to find it first!

Simone: How do you know all of this?

Sam: That I cannot answer. It's a secret I can't tell, not even Chelsey knows. And I'm not telling anyone until the time comes

Vidina: Okay...But it's a good thing you said something or we'd be chasing Mckelly for nothing

Sam: That palo should hold her off for now, so which means we can find the real palo and save Spira!

Simone: Do you know what it's called? does the palo have a certain name?

Sam: It's called the Shadow Palo. It holds all the evil in the world, If someone evil claims it and activates it, it will bring the shadows from the Underworld and...the most terrible one of all...the evil god himself...

Simone: Who? who's the evil god Sam?

(the others come out onto the deck)

Nina: So what's happening?

Sam: Nothing just stuff. I'll talk to you later(walks into ship)

Osric: Come on, I'm tired. I'll set the airship on auto-pilot. let's go to bed

Melanie: Yeah. Good night!

Vidina: We'll talk later

Simone: Yeah, good night

(everyone walks inside)

(in the morning, after you wake up in the cabin and go to bridge)

Osric: I got a distress call from the thunder plains! It's from Rikku! The Al bhed are having problems with a mutated fiend!

Yava: Mutated? now that's something new!

Melanie: should we go check it out?

Nina: Well of course duh! Aunt Rikku is like in trouble! We gotta help her and the Al bhed out!

Chelsey: Yeah, and take down that fiend! if we can...

Vidina: Alright let's do this Eaglewings!

(after you arrive at thunder plains)

This probably seem like nothing to do with the shadow palo but a mutated fiend? how bizarre!

(when you arrive at a lightning rod tower, Rikku is lying on the ground)

Nina: Aunt Rikku!(runs over and kneels beside Rikku)yuna oui ugyo? frana'c dra fiend?(are you okay? where's the fiend?)

Rikku: E's vеха. Dra fiend ec tykanuic! Ed'c sidydat, E tuh'd ghuf ruf pid ed sekrd gemm oui!(I'm fine. The fiend is mutated, I don't know how but it might kill you!)

Simone: Tuh'd funno Yihd Rikku, fa'mm cdub ed!(Don't worry Aunt Rikku, we'll stop it!)

Rikku: Be careful girls!(sits up)

(then the girls take off and when you reach the travel agency)

Cid: Well, I'll be if it isn't Yuna's little girls!

Chelsey: Great-Uncle Cid? you're bleeding!

Cid:(shows his arm)Yes, I know. We're trying everything but this fiend is some other breed

Nina: So like, do you know why it's mutated?

Cid: To tell you the bone-pickin' truth none of us know. But it's much quicker and stronger than any other fiend I've ever seen!

Simone: What if it's a shadow? or possessed by a shadow? Nina! Chelsey! we have to stop it!

Cid: I'd be careful or turn back if I were you.(then he watches the girls take off)Boy, teenagers these days...

(when you spot the fiend)

Chelsey:(gasps)Look out!

(a group of Al bhed are knocked down by the fiend's arm)

Chelsey: Hey! leave them alone you big bully!

Nina: Uh...Chelsey, not such a good idea!

(fiend comes over slowly)

Simone:(pulls out her sword)Well, let's get him girls!

AFTER BATTLE

(When the fiend falls back a spirit flies out of it and it forms into a girl)

Simone: It's Serena from the movie spheres! What is she doing here?

Serena: Stay out of our way...Stay out of our plans...soon your world will suffer from eternal darkness...

Chelsey: What? what do you mean?

Nina: What are you talking about?

Chelsey: Didn't you hear her talking just a second ago???

Simone: No sorry sis...she didn't say a thing

Chelsey:(thinking)*That's strange, maybe only I can understand her...but why?*

(Cid and Rikku run over)

Cid: Well, I'll be...you girls took out that fiend like eating breakfast. Whoa, you three are just like yer Mom

Chelsey: Wait! something's happening to Serena!

(the form of Serena changes into a demon-like girl and disappears as pyreflies)

Rikku: What just happened? was that a demon?

Nina: Okay I'm like so scared now, was that a fiend or a shadow?

Chelsey: I don't know but something's happening! and we got to stop it fast!

Simone: Aunt Rikku, Cid, I think we should get going now. We got lots of stuff to search for

Nina: Cheyah, I'll say

Rikku: Well, thanks for saving our butts. We should call you girls for our troubles. You're more like the fiend busters rather than just fiend hunters. It reminds me of Eighteen years ago when your Mother and I were sphere hunters...and we fought those dark aeons in the temples to save the people...and that look on Yunie's face...Oh well, like I said you three are good fighters

Simone: Uh...yeah sure.

Nina: Bye Aunt Rikku!

Rikku: Byebye!

Cid: We'll see ya later!

(girls take off and the phoenix picks them up)

MEANWHILE ON THE MCCLOUD AIRSHIP

Mckelly: My HQ! my home! It's been destroyed! NOOOOO!!! This can't be happening!

Gawk: Mckelly! Mckelly! your father's here!

(Mckelly's father in his hooded cloak comes through the door)

Mckelly: Father?

????: Mckelly, Do you still have the palo?

Mckelly: Yes, I do!(shows her father the emerald palo)

????:(takes a good look at it)Wait a minute, the palo in the movie sphere had a symbol on it. The symbol of my god, this one is just a dud

Mckelly: I'm sorry Father! I could've sworn it was the palo! I'm so sorry...

????: We will find the real one. We have to search hard, if we are to free my god from the Underworld along with the shadows. He has sent me another vision, another dream. I am to steal the lives of Yuna's precious daughters and I will grow invincible! And so will my god. He has also told me that the palo is somewhere hidden...a place no one knows about. Mckelly we must find it!

Mckelly: I know father, I'll search Mt. Gagzet. There are some hidden things in the floating ruins! It might be there!

????: Then that's the place we'll look. Soon Spira will suffer, and I will get my revenge on Lady Yuna...

BACK ON THE PHOENIX

Osric: So...we were chasing Mckelly for no reason? that the whole time that palo was a dud?

Sam: Correct. The palo that is meant to bring danger to Spira is the Shadow palo. Good thing is that the Mcclouds don't know about it so we can find it and destroy it

Melanie: How?

Sam: I'll figure it out when we find it

Chelsey: Uh...Sam...how do you know this stuff? you never told me any of this...

Sam: Please don't ask that, I'll tell you later...promise

Yava: Man, this sphere-hunting stuff gets complicated

Vidina: Tell me about it...I don't know how Yuna, Rikku and Paine handled it and took on Vegnagun...

Osric: Hey! we got a call from the Moonflow!

Simone: Moonflow? must be Tobli. He's probably planning another concert for us...

Yava: As always. Why don't we go see him? Then we'll continue this search for the Shadow palo

Simone: sounds good to me. To the Moonflow!

(At the Moonflow, Tobli comes running over)

Nina: Hey, Tobli! It's been a while...I guess

Tobli: yep yep. It's been the longest of the longest. Oh, and infact we've planned another concerty concert location for your band yep yep

Vidina:(crosses his arms)Where is this location?

Tobli: Here! On the Moonflow at nightfall! It'd be absolutely astoundshing! yep yep!

Simone: But we need an audience you know!

Tobli: Don't worry, my newest assisitant has that allll taken care of!

Nina: who's this new assistant? is he cute?

Tobli: Oh, here he is now!

(Everyone looks to see a big stuffed mog with a talking cat on it)

Yava: What the hell, is that?

Tobli: His name is Cait Sith. But to tell you the truth, he talks too too much I tell ya

Cait: Yo! Tobli, who are those guys?

Tobli: The Dark angels. They're performing a concert here!

Cait:(mog walks over to Simone)Oh yeah, I know you guys. And you must be Simone, the oldest daughter to Lady Yuna, right?

Simone: Uh yeah that's me(thinking)*I can't believe I'm talking to a cat this is stupid*

Cait:(turns to Nina)Oh, and who are you?

Nina: I'm the one and only Nina, future number one fashion designer and Simone's sister. How do you know how to talk?

Cait: To tell you that truth I don't know why.(jumps off his Mog and looks up at Nina)But I love talking to you

Nina:(smiles)That's what everyone says to me

Chelsey:(kneels down)You're such a cute kitty. I'd like to have you as a pet

Cait: Your pet? No way sister! I want to be Nina's pet!

Chelsey:(blinks surprised)Um...Okay

Tobli: Come on! come on! It's almost nightfall! Dark angels get ready, the spectators will be here soon!

Yava: Yeah. Let's get changed guys!

Simone: Angels, let's get our gear!

Vidina: Right behind ya Kool katt

(Simone and the others take off)

Nina: Good luck guys!

Chelsey: It's gonna be awesome! especially since it'll be nightfall. The moonflow looks so nice at nightfall. I remember when Mom and Dad took us here when we were little...

Nina: Yeah, and we got to ride on the shoopuf!

Cait: I'll stand by you, Nina

Nina: Uh...sure okay(leans over to Chelsey and whispers in her ear)Chels, that cat keeps bugging me!

Chelsey:(whispers back)What am I supposed to do?

Nina: Get rid of him!

(a group of Hypello show up)

Hypello: Tobli, the sphectatators are almosht here!

Tobli: Alright! Alright! get in your positions!

(At nightfall, all of the people are staring at the beautiful view of the Moonflow and you see Simone an her band on a little stage Tobli and the Hypello put up)

Simone: Just before we begin, I wrote this song not too long ago. It's about dreams. Wonderful dreams, dreams we want be come true. I called it "Say goodnight". I hope you enjoy it

(now as Simone is singing everyone is staring at the pyreflies flying everywhere and Chelsey looks up in the sky and spots two shooting stars then closes her eyes to make a wish and then near the end of the

concert a rainbow appears in the sky then Simone stops singing and the concert is finished)

Simone: Thank you everyone

(everyone starts clapping and cheering)

Nina: Whoooooooo!!! that was great guys!

Chelsey: Good job!

Sam: your sister's a good singer

Chelsey: Yeah I know. She has a good voice, I think she got that from my Mom.

Sam: So, wanna look around? it's very nice out at nightfall. The river's practically glowing because of all the pyreflies

Chelsey:(smiles)Sure, why not?

Cait: Wanna take a walk with me, Nina?

Nina: Go away, you pussy cat!

Cait: Fine with me.(walks over and starts purring and rubbing on Nina's leg)

Nina: Ewwwww! you like me? I'm a totally different species than you are! Get off me you sick feline!(shakes Cait off and stomps off)

Cait: Hey! come back beautiful!

(Simone gets off the stage and everyone crowds around her)

Can you sign this?

You were great! Your mother must be so proud of you!

Simone: Thanks a bunch

(After Simone signs all the autographs, she walks over the lake and sits down)

Simone: What a beautiful sight...

(Vidina walks over)

Vidina: Hey there.

Simone:(turns around)Hey. So did you have fun drumming?

Vidina: You bet I did! You write good songs, ya? And you have a really nice voice...

Simone: Thanks Dine you're so sweet

Vidina:(sits down beside Simone)I'm just a drummer, all I do the whole time is bang sticks on drums. But you sing with your heart. You practically are the show, that's good, ya?

Simone: Well, ever since I was little, I've always wanted to be a singer more than anything...well of course you'd know you knew me since I was born

Vidina: Yeah, and you know my dream...right?

Simone:(giggles)Yep. To be one of the greatest Blitzers in all of Spira!

Jake: Hey! Simone! Remember me?

Simone:(looks behind her to see Jake)Jake?(starts to blush)Hey...I um...haven't seen you for a few days...how's it going?(stands up and walks over to Jake)

Jake: Nothing much. You were great, your songs are phenonemal. They're good, and not only that you're very beautiful...

Simone:(blushes even more)Thank...you...

Jake: Will you go out with me?

Simone: WHAT?

Jake: So, will you?

Simone:(nodds smiling)Yes, I will!

(Jake and Simone hug and Vidina gets angry then runs off)

Jake: Then it's settled. I'll see you at Ganga City on friday at 6:00 pm, at games square. Is that okay?

Simone: Friday is perfect. I'll see ya there. Bye

Jake: Bye(waves then walks off)

Simone:(turns around)So where were we? Vidina...Vidina?

Osric:(walks over)He went running towards the ship, he looked kinda upset. I dunno why though..oh well, we're ready to go

Simone: Um...okay(walks to the ship)

I had a feeling why Vidina took off. It's because Jake had asked me out and I said yes. I was so excited that I was Jake's new girlfriend, but I felt bad because Vidina. Maybe he liked me...had feelings for me. I just wanted to be his friend but apparently he wanted more

Tobli:(runs over)Simone! Simone! Hold on! I need to tell you something!

Simone:(turns around)Yeah?

Tobli: This concert was a thriller! Everyone loved it! I made so much gil! Your band and Jake's band are very successful yep yep. Oh and good luck on your journey

Simone: Thanks Tob, I'll see ya later

Tobli: Bye!

(Simone goes on Airship and it flies off, now on bridge)

Osric: Hey, Dine. We rocked the Moonflow didn't we?...Dine?

Vidina: I'm not in the mood to talk

Yava: Why what's wrong Vidina? I'm pretty sure nothing went wrong...

(Simone comes down)

Simone: Guess what...Jake asked me out!

(all of the girls scream)

Melanie: You're totally kidding...right?

Simone: Nope. I have to meet with him on Friday at Ganga city

Yava: You are sooo lucky!

Nina: I can't believe it! My big sister...going with Jake Starr!

Chelsey: We're proud of ya, sis!

Simone:(smiles then frowns when she looks at Vidina who is looking away)Vidina? are you-

Vidina: I'm fine

Simone:(walks over and sighs)Vidina...you're upset because Jake asked me out right? Why?

Vidina:(a tear goes down his cheek)He's...He's gonna use you...Simone. I don't trust him, he seems suspicious. And what he told me on Besaid is true...he's gonna betray you! I don't want him to hurt you, Simone...you're my best friend

Simone:(her eyes fill with tears and hugs Vidina)It's okay Big guy, I'll be fine. I'm sorry I didn't believe you...But...I've always wanted to go out with Jake

Vidina: You trust him?

Simone: I don't know. I barely know him, But...I can't just ditch him without really knowing him...But since he told you that...for you(looks up at Vidina and smiles)I'll try not to kiss him

Vidina: Really? And keep an eye out, just incase he has bad people with him

Simone: Don't worry I will

(when scene ends and you go to Sam)

Sam: Well, I've been thinking about the Shadow palo and well...where do you think is a place with secrets?

Simone: Um...I'm not sure...uh...

Osric: How about the floating ruins? there has to be something up there

Nina: Why don't we go? in the three months of sphere-hunting...we've never gone there

Chelsey: So can we go?

Simone: Yeah! let's go!

Osric: Alright the search begins!!!

(at the floating ruins)

Chelsey: Wow! floating rocks! how neat is that?

Nina: pretty cool

This is the floating peak of Mt. Gagazet, on the other side of it is Zanarkand. My Mom told us she went here when she was a sphere hunter and she got dizzy and almost fell off...

(on the floating ruins)

Vidina: Okay, onto the peak we go! Right...Sam>?

Sam: Yeah, let's go...uh...uh...what are we called?

Chelsey: we're the Eaglewings!

Melanie: Oh yeah! the Eaglewings kick @\$\$!

(Halfway to the peak)

Vidina: what's that sound?

Simone: what sound?

Chelsey: I...hear it too. It sounds like something is scratching

Nina:(looks up)Uh...guys...we got company!

Sam: Just our luck!

(a huge arachnid jumps down and the girls run towards it)

AFTER BATTLE

Vidina: Alright. There might be more of those things...be careful...okay?

Yava: Yeah we get it let's go now

(At the peak)

Simone: So, where do we look?

Sam:(looks around)Hmmm. Check everywhere guys...maybe we'll find a clue of some sort

Chelsey: Ugh...there's got to be at least one clue...

Mckelly: Looking for the palo Chickenwings?

Simone: oh look the cat came back

Mckelly: Think I'm stupid? My father and I just found out that your mother's palo was just a dud. The real prize is hidden...somewhere

Sam: I see you guys know about the Shadow plao as well...

Mckelly:(looks at Sam)Uh...who are you?

Simone: It doesn't matter. We're getting the Shadow palo first!

Gawk: Nuh-uh! we are! we are!

Mckelly: you're absolutely right Gawk.(snaps her fingers)Guards! let's take down these fools and push them down the cliff!

Guards: right boss!

Mckelly: try and stop me now...Chickenwings!

AFTER BATTLE

(the girls and their friends are pushed down the cliff)

Simone:(wakes up slowly and a group of Ronso are surrounding her and her friends)Uh...guys, a bunch of weird guys are surrounding us

Vidina:(wakes up and stands)What the?

Simone: Um...what were they called again? oh I just lost it!

(everyone else gets up)

Melanie: Hey look uh...huh?

Sam: I'm pretty sure they're uh...someone help me out

Chelsey: Aren't they called uh...Ramsos?

Ronso: Humans are so stupid

Nina: No we're not! just because I don't think doesn't mean I'm stupid

Chelsey: Yeah that really made sense, Nina. God you're dumb

(then three ronso youth appear)

ronso youth#1: we're Ronso!

ronso youth#2: Get out of our territory you trespassers!

Yava: But, we're sphere-hunters! and we got pushed off the cliff!

ronso youth#3: Liars! we will not let you pass!

(the three ronso youth pull out their spears)

Simone: Then we'll fight you!(pulls out her sword)and continue on!

AFTER BATTLE

Kimahri: Stop at once! Lian, Ayde, Rasha!

Liam: Elder Kimahri always ruin fun

Rasha: they're trespassers!

Chelsey: No! we're sphere-hunters!(walks over to Kimahri)please, believe us. we're sphere-hunters on a mission, looking for the Shadow palo

Kimahri: Your eyes...they speak truth. and look familar...I am elder Kimhri leader of the Ronso tribe

Chelsey:(bows her head)I'm Chelsey, these are my friends(then points to Nina and Simone)and those two are my sisters

Nina: Uh...hi...uh...Elder Kimahri. I'm Nina and that's Simone

Simone: Thank you for believing us

Kimahri: Kimahri had feeling that Chelsey speak truth. Chelsey's eyes say Chelsey speaks the truth and reminds Kimahri of old friend

Nina: who?

Kimahri: Her eyes remind Kimahri of Tidus and her face remind Kimahri of Yuna

Nina: Well...Yuna and Tidus are our parents

Ayde: All lies! Elder Kimahri should not believe these liars,they are here to-

Kimahri: Silence! Ronso, make way for newcomers. Simone, Nina, Chelsey and friends. Kimahri must show you something, follow

Simone: should we trust him?

Chelsey: well he was Mom's old friend. Let's go!

(At statue of Kimahri)

Osric: Look, it's a statue of that Ronso elder!

Kimahri: come over here.(standing by a statue of Yuna)

Nina: hey, that woman on that statue...she looks just like...Mom?

Simone: It is Mom but what's with the horn on her head?

Kimahri: That is how ronso honor her. Yuna defeat Sin and bring Eternal Calm then defeat Vegnagun two years later

Chelsey:(looks up at statue)So uh...Elder Kimahri, how did you know my Mom?

Kimahri: Kimahri Yuna's guardian

Simone: Really? I never knew...Mom never really talked about you...not even Dad

Kimahri: Kimahri not see Yuna for Eighteen years. Not even know that Yuna have daughters

Nina: Well, that sucks

Kimahri: follow Kimahri to Fayth scar, rest there and Ronso warriors will watch over you

Simone: Thank you so much. It was an honor to meet you Kimahri

(now the girls follow Kimahri with their friends, then after you reach the Fayth scar, a scene starts with the group sitting around a campfire in the cave)

Vidina:(yawns)I'm quite tired. I'm going to sleep soon

Simone: Me too. This cave is pretty uh...cold if you ask me

Sam: So, any clues so far?

Yava: Nope. Not one, why don't we ask some of the ronsos if they know about the Shadow palo?

Osric: Good idea Yav, whadda say guys?

Melanie: Fine with me. You can go ahead because I'm going to sleep.(lays down in her sleeping bag)

Nina: I'll go to bed too. Good night guys

Chelsey: You tired Sam? because I'm going to bed too

Sam: I guess(Sam and Chelsey go in their sleeping bags)

Osric: Everyone's tired already? I guess I'll go to bed

Yava: Same.(Osric and Yava go in thir sleeping bags)

Vidina: So, we're the only ones awake

Simone: Yeah. I hope we find the Shadow palo before Mckelly and them do, or Spira is in trouble

Vidina: Don't worry, we'll find the Palo. But for now let's get some rest

Simone: Okay, good night

Vidina: Good night.(Vidina ans Simone go in their sleeping bags)

(Later on in the night, you wake up and when go to the entrance of the cave)

Simone: Uh...Kimahri?

(Kimahri walks over)

Kimahri: what do you need?

Simone: Do you know anything about the Shadow palo?

Kimahri:(shakes his head)Kimahri never hear of Shadow palo

Simone: Oh bummer...

Kimahri: Kimahri will come back. Kimahri must go check on clan

(After Kimahri walks off, Simone stands there thinking to herself)

Simone:(thinking)*Hmm...Kimahri doesn't know then maybe I'll ask another Ronso...oh what am I thinking, no one knows about it*

(then cave starts to rumble and everyone wakes up)

Vidina: W-what's happening?

Yava: It's...an earhtquake! Everyone, run!

(After everyone runs outside)

Simone: Kimahri! Are you okay?

(Kimahri is on the ground, wounded)

Kimahri: Large fiend on rampage, Kimahri could not stop it...

Simone: tell us, where did it go?

Chelsey:(points to a huge goliath spider on the mountain)I think that's it!

Nina: That thing...Is ver big...It's an enormous spider!

(the huge spider jumps down with a glyph shining on its belly)

Sam: It's a shadow! I know because it has a glyph on it!

Simone:(takes out her sword)Girls, let's take down this eight-legged freak!

Vidina: Are you sure you can beat it?

Chelsey: When there's a will there's a way!

AFTER BATTLE

Simone: That's the fourth shadow we fought so far...how many more?

Sam:(stays silent for a moment)That was no ordainary shadow...it was a shadow lord

Osric: A shadow lord? what is that?

Vidina: How do you know these things? are you crazy?

Sam: No I am not! It'a just...my mind's been fuzzy for awhile. And when I saw that shadow in Besaid, my

knowledge came back to me

Chelsey:(walks over)Sam, why haven't you told any of us earlier...It would've come in handy!

Sam: I know that...I just didn't know how to say it. I'm sorry

Vidina: So, anything else you'd like to tell us before we leave?

Sam: That shadow lord we just saw is known as Arachnadia, the eight-legged titan. There are six shadow lords: Gryffidon, Donizard, Azi Dazuki, Arachnadia, Dimina and Balora

Melanie: There's six of those things! so we have two more to go right?

Sam: That's right, each of them have their own special powers. They have protective barriers over them to protect them from the sunlight. Gryffidon, the first shadow you defeated in Besaid is the lord of aerial combat, the other one you fought in Besaid was Donizard, he is lord of Hell's flames.

Nina: what about the shadow in Zanarkand?

Sam: The shadow lord in Zanarkand was Azi Dazuki. He is lord of Mana, he gathers energy from the pyreflies and uses magic with it. An the two others we'll probably run into are Dimina and Balora

Chelsey: What is the purpose of the shadow lords?

Sam: All six Shadow lords serve the evil god of darkness. They all slumbered in the Underworld for a million years until the Shadow palo gathered enough energy. The Shadow palo holds all the evil in the world, and it has absorbed all that evil until there was too much and it unleashed into the Underworld and the six shadow lords woke up. The Shadow palo allowed them to rise into our world and cause chaos, but if they are defeated...They are not truly dead but the glyphs on their bellies are a key to the Shadow palo, if a shadow lord is defeated, a symbol on the Shadow palo will appear. And if all are defeated...the entrance to the Shadow palo will be unlocked and it's whereabouts will be revealed

Simone: So if we defeat all of the shadow lords, we can find the Shadow palo!

Sam: Yes, but if someone evil were to find the Shadow palo like I told you earlier...the god of evil will arise...

Osric: who's the evil god Sam?

Sam: His name is...

Kimahri: Is the fiend gone?

Chelsey: Yes. But it wasn't a fiend, it was a shadow. It's a long story

Kimahri: Kimahri thank you for help. Kimahri and Ronso will help Eaglewings at anytime

Lian: Lian wrong about trespassers, for Lian way of apologizing, Lian and Ronso build statue of Simone, Nina and Chelsey!

Nina: Sweet! a statue of my beautiful self!

Ayde: with horns on heads!

Simone: Um...thanks...I guess...well bye now!

Kimahri: Farewell

(After you go on phoenix and then go to bridge)

Yava: Hey guys...we're getting sphere waves on the commsphere network! but they're very weak...

Simone: where is it coming from Yav?

Yava: Hmmm...it's a location I never heard of...Pandora's cove?

Nina: sound's cool! Why don't we go and check it out!

Chelsey: Pandora's cove...isn't that an underwater cave that was recently discovered?

Osric: Oh yeah, I heard of this place! they found it last year beneath Bevelle!

Simone: Well since it's a new location let's go see it!

(At Pandora's cove)

Nina: wow...it's sooo pretty! look at all the crystals!

Simone: Yeah...well we're gonna have to dive into the water to go on any further...Wanna go?

Chelsey: Yeah!

Simone: Alright, into the cove we go!

(When you're out of the water, the girls are now in a dark cave with pyreflies swarming around them and there's a pedestal with a sphere on it)

Simone: Sphere!

(then there's a rumble and some large blue charmeleon looking fiend shows up)

Nina: Whoa! look at that thing! But it's no shadow lord...it's just some fiend

Chelsey: Some fiend? it's huge!

Simone: Less talking more fighting!

AFTER BATTLE

Chelsey: Oh boy...this is starting to get tiring you guys

Nina: Yeah you said it. I wonder why there'd be a sphere down here...

Suka: Well, well you three again

(The girls turn around to see Suka)

Simone: Suka? you were here? the whole time?

Suka:(smirks)You just don't get it do you? Do you have any idea what you got yourselves into fighting the Shadow lords? Do you know the price you'll have to pay?

Nina: What do you mean? We're on the hunt for the Shadow palo and well...the only way to find it is to defeat all six shadow lords!

Suka: I know that, but you still have to deal with the evil one and his god...Just because you defeat all six Shadow lords...doesn't mean Spira is completely safe

Simone:(takes out her sword)What are you talking about?

Suka: I'm saying...the evil one could find the palo as well if you defeat the Shadow lords. In fact...I know who the evil one is...

Simone:(gets ready to slash her sword at Suka)Who? who is it? tell me or I'll slice you into pieces!

Suka:(does an evil laugh)I'm not telling! because I work for the evil god and I was sent here to stop you!

(The girls gasp and Suka pulls off his hood and he has long blonde hair and his eyes start to shine red and he laughs again)

Suka: If you three really want to know the answer fight me first!(draws a black and red blade and Simone runs at him)Pathetic creatures you humans are...

AFTER BATTLE

Suka: No...no! That can't be right! I'm a demon...taken down by Humans! That is impossible, I harness the dark forces!(then he starts to fade away)

Chelsey: A demon you say?

Suka: Yes...one of my god's loyal servants...I will tell him about this and finish you off!(then he disappears)

Simone: Yeah whatever! Boy...this journey is getting weirder by the minute...

Chelsey: yeah and more complicated...I knew Suka wasn't really a person who studied myths...I could feel it somehow...like I'm connected with him

Nina: How can you be connected with a demon?

Chelsey: I don't know...there are alot of things to learn...we're just starting to learn those things...

Simone: Well come on, let's take that sphere and go back. This place is creeping me out

Nina: I wonder what's on that sphere anyways?

Chelsey: We'll watch it on the Phoenix...let's go

(Now back on the phoenix)

Vidina: So, what happened?

Nina: We saw Suka again! and he's a demon!

Melanie: A DEMON?

Simone: Yeah but we fought that bastard off, he said some stuff about us fighting the Shadow lords saying even if we defeat them all the evil one will still find the Shadow palo and all of that crap

Sam: Suka? demon? Hmmm...did he say that he worked for the evil god?

Chelsey: Yeah...he did. He said he was sent here to stop us, I guess from finding the Shadow palo and destroying it

Sam: Let me think...my mind's still fuzzy...hey wasn't Suka the hooded boy we met in Besaid who told us about the Shadows and the Underworld?

Yava: Yeah, he was!

Sam: Oh man...mind's still fuzzy..sorry

Nina: hey about that sphere-

Yava: I already analyzed it. But...it doesn't work...

Simone: What? all that work for nothing???

Yava: Yeah...sorry

Simone: Well, I'm going to take a little nap for a couple of hours.(walks off to the elevator)

Nina: nightie nightie!

(After you sleep and wake up, Vidina comes in the cabin then a scene starts when you go to him)

Simone: Hey Dine

Vidina: Hey. So...you freaked out because of the Shadow lord things, ya?

Simone: I guess. But how does Sam know all of this? I mean...there's so much we don't know about him...

Vidina: Yeah, but we'll find the Shadow palo don't you worry

Simone: Hey, since when do I worry? I don't worry THAT much, I don't even worry at all

Vidina: Uh-huh, sure you don't!

Simone: Vidina!(her and Vidina laugh then she looks on the calender then stops)Oh my gosh! It's Friday!

Vidina: So?

Simone: I'm supposed to meet Jake in Ganga city at 6:00 today! I almost forgot!

Vidina: oh yeah, that. Well, you should get ready, ya?

Simone: Good point. I'll tell the others right away

(After Simone walks out Vidina gets mad and kicks the wall)

Vidina: Dammit! I thought she'd forget about it! oh it's no use...might as well move on

(At the bridge)

Simone: We have to go to Ganga city, Jake is expecting me there at 6:00! I'm going to be late!

Osric: Don't panic Simone, we'll get there on time

Simone:(while combing her hair)Do I look okay?

Yava: Yeah Simone you look fine

Sam: Where's Vidina?

(Vidina walks out of the elevator)

Vidina: Hey guys! so we have to drop off Simone at Ganga city right?

Yava: Are you okay with the fact Simone's going out with Jake?

Vidina: Yeah, I'll be fine

Melanie: Alright then what are we waiting for? Kool Katt has a date!

Simone: I hope I look good(still combing her hair)

(At Ganga city)

Nina:(giggles)I love this place! It's like Luca but bigger!

Chelsey: Yeah I know! Why don't we chill here for a bit while Simone and Jake have their fun?

Nina: sounds totally cool Princess!

Simone: Alright gang, I'll be in the Games square if need me and uh...

Yava: Go on! we'll be here, if anything suspecting happens we'll let you know!

Melanie: Go have some fun Simone, he just might be the one!

Simone: Yeah, you might be right(looks at Vidina for a bit then runs off)Okay, see ya later!

(At Games square)

Ganga city was built by an ocean, it's not huge like Silverdome city but it's bigger than Luca. Families and friends come here all the time. It's well known for festivals, games, and much more! Now the only things Luca's good for are Sphere break, Blitzball, and shopping of course

Jake: Hey, you're on time!

Simone: Yeah, I am

Jake: Come on, let's play some games! Then we'll you know...

Simone:(giggles nervously)hehehe Sounds like fun(thinking)*Dammit, I promised Vidina I wouldn't kiss Jake. Oh well a promise is a promise*

Jake: Come on! let's go! we'll have lots of fun!

(After playing the mini-games and when you go to the snack stop)

Simone: Wow, that was so much fun Jake!

Jake: Yeah it was fun. You know...You're the only girl that I dated that I actually had fun with

Simone: S-seriously?

Jake: Yeah, you and I are gonna get along just fine. And, I've always wanted to date you ever since I saw you for the first time, and well here we are!

Simone: Yeah, oh look! the fireworks are starting!

Jake: let's get a good spot then!(grabs Simone's hand then they both run off then find a spot)

(At a balocny, Vidina is watching Jake and Simone with binoculars while Nina and Chelsey are standing behind him)

Chelsey: This isn't a good idea, Vidina. I mean, I thought you were okay with it

Vidina: I am okay with it

Chelsey: If you're okay with it then why are you wacthing them?

Vidina: making sure he doesn't do anything to her

Nina: Do you care about our sister that much? then why won't you tell her?

Chelsey: Yeah, Simone would understand

Vidina: I know but...It's hard to say. Her and I have known each other forever, and what if she doesn't take it seriously and you know, think I'm joking?

Chelsey: Vidina, Simone would love for you to tell her that you have strong feelings for her, maybe if she'd knew she'd be happy

Vidina:(sighs)I guess you're right Chels. You two sure know alot about these things

(Nina and Chelsey smile and giggle)

Nina: well duh we're girls!

Vidina: Oh look, the fireworks started!

(As the fireworks go off, Jake puts an arm around Simone and leans close to her)

Jake: These fireworks are...beautiful, like you

Simone:(blushes)Oh, Jake...you're so kind

Jake:(leans closer getting ready to kiss Simone)You're kind as well, I think our realtionship will be a good one

Nina: Red alert! Red alert!(turns on the communicator)Guys! they're about to kiss!

Chelsey: Oh no! if they kiss...Simone will...

Vidina: No...NO! this can't be happening!

(Simone and Jake are about to kiss but Simone backs up)

Simone: I'm sorry Jake, I don't kiss on first dates...(thinking)*That was for you Vidina you so owe me*

Jake:(stroke's Simone's cheek)Hey I'm cool with that. So...what have you been up to on sphere-hunting?
any cool missions lately?

Nina: Oh good, they didn't kiss.(turns on the communicator>false alarm guys, they didn't kiss. What are they talking about?

Vidina: Beats me. Just stuff I guess

(A group of lizard brutes appear and point their guns)

lizard brute#1: Hey, what are you doing here?

Vidina: What? wait...It's the Mcclouds!

lizard brute#2: You're spoling another plan!

Chelsey: Get lost will you?

(then the Wattson brothers show up)

Simon: Don't tell us what to do, little girl

Charlie:(points gun at people)Alright everyone, hands up! or we'll shoot you!

(people panic and put their hands up and some lizard brutes start shooting and people run off)

Nina: Hey! leave them alone!

(back to where Simone and Jake are)

Simone: Oh my gosh! the Mcclouds are here! I have to stop them!(starts to run but Jake pulls her back)

Jake: Don't worry about them

Simone: I'm sorry Jake, but I must stop the Mcclouds! Before they cause too much chaos! I'll see ya later...bye!(runs off)

Jake: You may think you've won but wait for what we have in store for you

(Back in Ganga city square)

Simone: Hey, you're causing chaos, get out of here Mcclouds!

Nick: please, we're here to find clues on the palo...uh...right?

Simon: You idiot...Men take care of her!

(a bunch of lizard brutes run at Simone then she takes them down with her sword then runs off)

Nina: Simone! where's Jake?

Simone: I had to leave him. To stop those idiotic Mcclouds!

Chelsey: Don't worry, we will! the others are at Shinra corp. HQ, we have to meet them there after. I don't know why but let's kick some Mccloud butt!

Nina: Oh yeah, no one messes with us!

Simone: It's Eaglewing kick-some-@\$\$-athon!

(After all the battles with the lizardsand arrive near Shinra corp HQ)

Nick: We'll find that palo, and help our boss and her Dad rule Spira!

Simon: Let's go boys!

(the Mcclouds take off then the others run over)

Yava: Hey! the Mcclouds just ran off, did you kick their butts or something?

Nina: We sure did. Now why are we here?

Melanie: Sam's idea...he said that a genius ought to track down the palo down somehow and Shinra is a super genius!

Osric: Yeah, he invented the commsphere netowrk, megabikes, machine guns, and built Silverdome and Ganga city!

Simone: That's a smart idea! Sam, you are brilliant

Sam: Hey, everyone's always said that Shinra was a super genius, so maybe he has a device that can track the Shadow palo

(the group starts to walk in)

Chelsey: I can't wait to meet Shinra!

(At the help desk)

help desk girl: Hi, may I help you?

Simone: we're here to see Shinra. We need to ask him a few questions

help desk girl: Do you have an appointment?

Simone: No but...we really need to him!

help desk girl: I'm sorry, I can't let you through without an appointment. Come back some other time

Simone: Then I'll go the long way(runs towards the elevator)

help desk girl: Hey, you can't go in there!

Simone: Too late!(goes in elevator)

(In Shinra's office)

Nina: We should've just booked an appointment

Simone: So, where's Shinra?

Shinra: Over here

(everyone looks to see Shinra standing by a spinning flying machina)

Chelsey: Wow, I can't believe I'm face-to-face with Shinra, the super genius!

Shinra: Right, so...why are you here?

Sam: We need a device that could find...uh...something that we're looking for

Shinra: What are you looking for?

Vidina: A palo. Do you have something that could track it down?

Shinra: Hmmm. yes, as a matter a fact I do. Come with me

(After you follow Shinra to a control room)

Yava: Uh..where are we?

Shinra: This is the control room. This is where we test and build my products. My latest invention is the mako reactor, I plan to create a wonderful future for Spira and this reactor is one thing that'll lead to it

Simone: This mako reactor has nothing to do with looking for a palo

Shinra: I'll show you that in a minute. But, in the Farplane, a life source swirls within it and it is known as Mako energy. But some people think I'm crazy because they say that if I suck out the Mako energy then all live on this planet would end

Chelsey: why do you need the mako energy?

Shinra: Mako energy is not only a life source but it can power-up machina and we could build enormous cities that never sleep. Spira will be like back then, just imagine

Chelsey: It'd be wonderful...but what if life were all to end? you should think hard on this...I mean, all living things would die off...including Humans

Shinra: Don't worry, I'm sure we'll all be fine. I am a super genius after all. Oh...right! let's find that palo for you guys!

I didn't really trust Shinra, the fact that he wanted to suck out Mako energy-our life source-out of the earth was crazy. I understand he wants Spira to be like back then but he should think on this first...

Shinra: Alright, here's my sphere oscillo finder. So , you're looking for a palo right? what's the name of it?

Sam: The Shadow palo

Shinra: Okay um...I'm searching now!

Osric: Man you must be super rich!

Shinra: Yeah, I am. Oh...looks like it picked up something

Simone: What?

Shinra: Oh...this can't look good at all. It's telling me it doesn't exist...

Sam: It has to exist! it has to!

Shinra: Sorry kid but it doesn't. Now, I am a busy man so you kids better leave. See ya later

Simone: Fine...let's go

I knew something like that would happen, I had a feeling the Shadow palo wouldn't be found. Did it exist? or was it all a lie?

CHAPTER THREE IS COMPLETE!

5 - chapter four

MEANWHILE ON THE MCCLOUD SHIP

Mckelly: Oh where could that stupid palo be? Those Chickenwings better not find it first! I will not allow it! Just wait until Spira is doomed...they're gonna regret messing with me and calling me a goblin!

????: Mckelly, do not worry, we will find the Shadow palo and bring my god to this pitiful world. I'm sure I'm the evil one, There is no other follower as loyal as I am

Mckelly: But Dad, how are you sure you're the evil one? what if it's someone that we've never expected to be the evil one?

????: You question too much my darling, I've been able to escape the Farplane for a reason and have you right?

Mckelly: Yeah but...there were holes that were made by Vegnagun that allowed you to escape. Plus, you just did it with a woman and had me then killed her right? I would like to know my mother someday you know...

????: Okay enough of this, before we find the Shadow palo we need the sacrifices first...Yuna's daughters, If I am to steal their lives then we must kidnap them

Mckelly: How? they'll find a way to escape...

????: Leave that to me. All we need is bait and we're all set. MUAHAHAHAHAHAHAHAHA! Lady Yuna, try to stop me now!

(now on the phoenix After you go to bridge)

Osric: I can't believe the Shadow palo didn't show up.(turns to Sam)Hey Sam, is this some kinda joke?

Sam: No! I knew it wouldn't show up, I had a feeling. The Shadow palo will not be revealed untill all of the six Shadow lords are killed and I should've stuck to that

Chelsey: Sam, I still want to know how you know these things!

Sam: I'm sorry but it's not time yet

Melanie: Well, when is it going to be time?

Sam: Soon, don't worry

Osric: Hey! we got a distress call from Kilika island! some monster is attacking the people!

Sam: A shadow lord! let's go stop it!

Nina: what if it's just a fiend?

Chelsey: let's just go find out! whatever it is, we need to save the people!

Simone: That monster is gonna get his @\$\$ kicked!

Vidina: Yeah! Eaglewings! move out!

(At Kilika dock at night)

This is where my mother performed her very first sending. She said that it was very upsetting, she was sending those who were killed by Sin at this dock. Then two years later, it was rebuilt by the Youth league. Isn't it beautiful?

(A crowd of people gather around the girls and their friends)

person#1: The high summoner's daughters! Welcome to Kilika

person#2: There's a monster in the Kilika woods trying to eat those who walk through them

Vidina: when did it show up?

person#3: Right at nightfall. It is very dark out so you'll need torches to find it

Simone: what does it look like?

person#1: An enormous bat, with a weird glyph on it's belly and two huge fangs

Sam: Dimina...

Chelsey:(looks at Sam)Who?

Sam: Chels, it's a Shadow lord. Dimina is the nocturnal lord. He gathers his powers during the day and uses them at night

Vidina: Well, let's get it!

Nina: A giant bat, hah! That's nothing, 'cause nothing scares me!

Chelsey: Marshmellow!

Nina: AHHHHH! WHERE? WHERE?

Chelsey:(trying hard not to laugh)Uh-huh, sure you're not scared.

Simone: Hurry up! sheesh!

Nina: Whatever, we're coming! gosh!

(When you go to the gates that lead to the woods)

Dona: Well, well, well. If it isn't Lady Yuna's daughters, and their friends

That's Dona. She's a former summoner, she gave my Mom a hard time on her pilgrimage but I guess two years later she softened a little. She's married to Barthello and has a daughter. She is good friends with Mom and at least calls her once a week to hang out

Nina: H-hey Dona, how's it been?

Dona: Very good, but not with that monster lurking in the woods. You see, I wanted to visit Barthello at the temple since he's helping out with Kari, but I can't with that thing around. But I've heard about you girls and you can take on creatures like this one in the woods

Chelsey: That's right

Dona: You three will be as famous as your mother when you're all older

Nina: ooooh! and they'll build a statue of us! cool

Chelsey: Yeah, we'll do anything to help the people of Spira

Dona: Your mother is the same. Good luck on fighting that monster. That guy will give you torches on your way through the gate. Be careful

Simone: We will. See ya Dona!

(When you reach halfway through the forest)

Kari: Hey guys!(runs over waving)

Simone: Kari! what's up?

Kari: Nothing, I'm trying to look for that fiend that's attacking everyone. Mom didn't exactly approve of me going to the temple with Dad and she was right, look what I got myself into

Simone: Well, we're here to stop the fiend too. Why don't we help each other out?

Kari: Why not! I've heard alot about you guys, I can't believe my friends are famous!

Simone:(giggles)Yeah, we are! Well let's go get this sucker!

Kari: I always thought you were cool Simone

That's Kari, the daughter of Dona and Barthello. She's seventeen like me and we've known each other for a long time now. When Mom came here to visit Dona, I'd hang out with Kari and when she came to Besaid with her parents, she'd play sphere hunters with the rest of us

(when you arrive at pilgrimage road)

Chelsey: I don't see that thing anywhere!

Sam: Dimina is quiet, and he can grab his prey like that(snaps his fingers)

Kari: Huh? did you say that thing was Dimina? what kind of fiend is called Dimina?

Sam: Uh...it's a long story. It's not a fiend, it's a shadow

Kari: a shadow?

Nina:(lights her torch at a nearby tree and walks over to it)That bat better like show up! I can't anymore, my feet hurt, my hair is messy...and like I want to go shopping!

(Then something flies swiftly through the trees and grabs Nina)

Nina: AAAAAAAHHHHHHH! HELP! HELP!

(Dimina carries Nina away towards the temple)

Simone: Nina!

Yava: That bat is so getting it!

Kari: Come on guys! to the Kilika temple!

(After you reach the temple's entrance)

Melanie: Nina! Hey you, let go of my best friend you bastard!

Simone:(shoots Dimina with her guns and Dimina drops Nina)Nina! someone catch her!

Nina: AAAAAAAHHHHHHHHHHHHHHHHH!!!!

(Nina falls and Osric runs and catches her)

Osric: Are you alright?

Nina:(blushes)Well now I'm fine. hehehe

Chelsey: Alright let's get him!

Kari: Yeah! this is gonna be fun!

(Nina jumps out of Osric's arms and runs with her sisters towards Dimina)

AFTER BATTLE

Barthello:(runs out of the temple)Is it gone?

Simone: Yep, it's finally gone

Barthello: Kari? are you alright?

Kari:(smiles)Never better Daddy, I helped my friends fight that shadow!

Barthello: Shadow?

Simone: We'll explain everything.

Barthello: Is Dona alright?

Chelsey: She's just fine. She's waiting at the gate

Dona: No I'm right here

Barthello: Dona!

Kari: Mom!

Dona: Are you two okay? is that thing gone?

Simone: Yep. We showed that thing not to mess with us!

Kari: and I helped!

Dona: Well I really owe you guys, why don't you kids come to our house for a bit?

Kari: Yeah come on, and you can tell us about the shadows!

Dona: Shadows?

Chelsey: We'll tell you at your house

Barthello: Alright let's go then

(At Dona's house)

Dona:(sits down on the couch)So, explain to us what shadows are

Simone: Well, when humans die, if they're full of hate and envy, and they won't accept their death or go to the Farplane, their feelings live on then eventually become creatures called Shadows, they inhabit the Underworld

Chelsey: That shadow we saw however was a Shadow lord, there are six of them that we have to defeat them in order to find the Shadow palo.

Vidina: We have to find it and destroy it before a group we know the Mcclouds find it first. So this journey so far has been about looking for clues on the shadows and the Shadow palo

Dona: I see. Well this Shadow palo doesn't sound too good, if you need our help let us know
Kari: Yeah, come back and visit sometime! I'd like to join you guys but I am quite busy helping out around town you know how it is
Simone: Yeah, I guess so. Well see ya later then
Dona: Farewell Eaglewings
Barthello: And send our regards to your Mother!
Simone: we will!
Sam: All we need is to defeat the last Shadow lord and we'll find the Shadow palo!
Chelsey: I can't believe we're that close!
Yava: I know. Spira will be saved in no time
Kari: Bye! Bye!
(On the phoenix)
Simone: Uh...where's Osrice and Nina?
Yava: On the deck. It looks like Nina is trying to convince Osrice to go out with her again...
Simone: Oh...that
(Meanwhile on phoenix deck)
Nina: Um Osrice, thanks for saving me earlier
Osrice: Hey, you're my friend, of course I wouldn't let you hit the ground
Nina: Um...Ozzy, remember when we were boyfriend and girlfriend? we went out for almost a year!
Osrice: Yeah, I know. But remember, we broke up because I only wanted us to be friends and you agreed
Nina: Oh, of course. I still agree, I'm just saying...I liked it
Osrice: So did I but we gotta move on
Nina:(sighs)you're right
Osrice: Well, see ya inside(walks to the elevator)
Nina: Oh ,I can't tell him that I still love him...he'll get mad at me. Love can be so complicated, I might as well move on(walks to the elevator)
About the whole Nina and Osrice thing, Nina went out with Osrice when she was thirteen then when she was fourteen, Osrice decided they should be friends. He didn't want their relationship to go too far. Nina agreed but later she realized she still loved him...and she still does as you can see
(At the bridge)
Yava: Hey guys, check this out! It's a transmission from Jasmyn! she needs our help!
Vidina:(yawns)For what?
Yava: Why don't we watch and see?
(Transmission starts)
Jasmyn: Guys, there are strange things happening in the Djose temple! apparently for some odd reason, the fayth for that temple came back and it is possessed! and another possessed fayth is also in the mushroom rock road! we have scouts in both places but they haven't come back for awhile. Please help them and stop those fayth!
(transmission ends)
Chelsey: Possessed fayth? what the heck is going on? first a fiend got possessed now fayth? how is that possible! the fayth can't come back, they're resting...can they come back?(looks at Sam)you know what's going on don't you?
Sam: Yes...as a matter a fact I do!
Chelsey: Well? spit it out! I need an explanation!
Melanie: whoa there Chels, hold your chocobos your losing your mind now!

Chelsey:(grabs Sam's shirt)What is going on? who are you? are you even from Spira? Tell me...please!

Sam: I'm sorry. It's not the right time

Chelsey: Yes it is! I've told you everything! tell me!

Sam: I'll tell you what's going on but I can't tell you the truth about me

Chelsey:(breathes heavily then lets go of Sam)I'm sorry...I should've-

Sam: Hey, it's okay. I understand, to tell you the truth it's hard hiding the truth. You should know...neither your family nor your friends know the truth about you...

Simone: The truth? Chelsey, what is he talking about?

Nina: Yeah little sis, that she said

Chelsey:(sighs)Okay, I've been hiding this for seven years now...I'm a fiend speaker

Osric: You're a what?

Yava: You're a fiend speaker...you can communicate with fiends and you hold some of the powers of darkness...I thought I'd never meet one

Vidina: Aren't fiend speakers evil?

Sam: Well people assume they're evil because they hold the powers of darkness and can communicate with fiends and other strange forces. a million years ago and even back more, there were alot of fiend speakers...but everyone thought they were pure evil so they killed them all except one wasn't found

Nina: who?

Sam: Serena...she hid from the people along with Timothy and her friends trying to make their palo work and bring Eternal peace to the world but later on...they were found and both Serena and Timothy were assassinated

Simone: but why did we see her?

Sam: She must've been brought here by someone...rumors say that she's been reborn. But maybe she's the one possessing the fayth since she possessed that fien in the Thunder plains. She must be testing us or something

Simone: We have to stop those fayth!

Vidina: how?

Chelsey: We'll find out. Osric, take us to the DJose temple first then we'll walk to the mushroom rock road since it's not far

Osric: Good plan. Alright, we're on our way!

(At the outside of DJose temple)

Simone: what the hell?

(the temple is surrounded by a huge thunder cloud that is shooting lighting at the Black cobra scouts)

scout#1: What do we do now? we can't stop the fayth if we can't even go inside!

scout#2: We'll have to call Lt. Jasmyn and tell her it's no use

Simone: Hey! we'll help out!

scout#3: Oh look it's the Eaglewings!

Chelsey: So the fayth is inside?

scout#1: Yes, but it's causing a huge lighting storm here

(then the temple door opens and a spirit comes out then the Black cobra scouts run off)

????: You there, stay out of my business, I'll find out the truth myself, I don't need you in my way!

Chelsey: It...just spoke to me! who are you and why did you possess that fiend and the fayth?

????: To get rid of those in my way, and so I can find the truth!

Chelsey: The truth? about what?

????: About the Shadow palo!(sends a huge bolt of lighting at the Eaglewings but luckily they dodge it)

Sam: Serena? is that you?

(The woman spirit stops and faces Sam)

????: Yes...it is

Sam: you're a shadow now that I see. you're trying to find the Shadow palo and see if you can bring back Timothy

????: Yes...that's true. How'd you know?

Chelsey: She said she is Serena and she is trying to bring Timothy back

????:(does an evil laugh)I'm not Serena! I'm just screwing with you!

(The Serena-like figure turns into a demon lady)

Chelsey: You're screwing with us?

Sam: She is? then who is she?

????: I am Denya, the mistress of darkness. I am sister to Suka and one of the evil lord's messengers. I am to make sure all six shadow lords cause enough chaos then find the evil one and bring darkness to the world!

Chelsey: Denya...why does that name seem so familiar?

Denya: I will possess every fayth and creature I find until I have defeated you. I have slumbered in the Underworld for a million years and I finally get to see the world above, and it is pathetic. The end of the world is about to begin! muahahahahahahaha!

Chelsey: No it's not! Come on, let's stop her!

Denya: Please!(snaps fingers)It's begun.

(the fayth of Ixion comes out of the temple and Denya goes into it and becomes a demon-like creature)

Denya: let's see how tough you humans really are!

AFTER BATTLE

Denya: You haven't defeated me yet! I still have another fayth possessed, chow!(then she disappears)

Yava: Wow, so only Chelsey can understand her?

Sam: so her name's Denya? what else about her? did she tell you?

Chelsey: She says she's the mistress of darkness, the sister of Suka and one of the evil lord's messengers. She's on a lookout for the evil one!

Nina: the evil one? could it be Mckelly or her father?

Chelsey: There could be a good chance, but where have I heard the name Denya from?

Nina: Hey, Sam. Do you like know anything about Denya?

Sam: A little. In myths they say she was created from gathered spirits and then was created as a demon. That's all I know. She's been watching us all along!

Vidina: So then she was the demon we saw at the Thunder plains disguised as Serena...

Melanie: Where is she heading now?

Simone: The mushroom rock road! there's a possessed fayth there so she's gotta be there!

Melanie: Is it possible that she could possess a human?

Sam: Probably, she's a demon after all. Let's find out more at mushroom rock road

Yava: and take out that Denya!

(everyone runs off towards the DJose highroad)

Timothy, Serena, Suka, Denya and the six shadow lords. Did they all seem to connect somehow? what did Timothy and Serena have to do with the Shadow palo? and how does Sam know all

these things? was he a shadow too?

(At mushroom rock road)

Jasmyn: Hey, my soilders from DJose temple told me that you took out the first fayth

Simone: we did. the one who possessed the fayth was a demon named Denya. If we stop her, she can't possess anything

Jasmyn: well the other possessed fayth is in the mushroom rock ravine, are you ready?

Simone: yeah, we're ready

Jasmyn: Be careful, if you need help just call me and I'll send some more troops

Simone: thanks Jasmyn, we will

Osric: I'll be calling you for sure

Jasmyn: can you please stop flirting with me?

Osric: but you're so hot

Nina:(drags Osric by the ear)Come on Osric...see ya later Jas!

(In the ravine)

Nina: It's sooo foggy here guys, I can't see like anything.(something makes a sudden movement)What was that?

Yava: The possessed fayth, where is it? Jasmyn said it was here so why isn't it here?

Simone: maybe it's hiding. Chelsey, you're the fiend speaker, try talking to Denya and see if she's here

Chelsey: Right, Denya? Denya? Are you here? come out! she isn't answering

Yava: What do we do now?

Vidina: Wait, I seem something! over there!

(Denya shows up)

Denya: You brats again! I had a feeling you'd come here

Chelsey: well you told us you'd be here

Denya: Oh yeah, I knew that...Anyways, I'll still find the evil one and bring the Underworld to this pitiful world. Darkness will prevail, and life will not exist anymore

Chelsey: Life will exist! we'll make sure of that. your god won't rise and I'll make sure

Denya: You're wasting my time!(turns into the possessed fayth)

AFTER BATTLE

Denya: You are strong, but I will be back!(her spirit swirls around then is sucked into a hole in the ground

Chelsey:(looks down the hole)Sure you will!

Nina: I wonder what the Underworld looks like

Vidina: I don't think we want to find out. Do we?

Simone: Not really, but we have to find the last shadow lord and defeat it if we want to find the Shadow palo. we gotta find it before the Mcclouds or Spira's in danger!

Melanie: Chillax Kool katt, we'll find it. All we need is confidence and a can-do attitude!

Nina: yeah! you go baby boo!

(Nina and Melanie high five)

Osric: We'll save Spira, I know we can. We're the Eaglewings for crying out loud!

Vidina: Go ozzy! that's the spirit!

(Jasmyn walks over)

Jasmyn: saving Spira eh? sounds like a big plan. But what are you saving the world from?

Simone: Okay, we'll tell you the whole thing

(After Simone tells Jasmyn about the shadows)

Jasmyn: Spira's in danger? man this is crazy. Well we'll be building a new HQ but not in the Calm

lands...on an airship. It'll be great!

Vidina: well, good luck with that!

Jasmyn: oh, thanks. I think we gotta go now. Farewell Eaglewings, good luck on saving Spira!

Simone: Thank you and good luck to you too!

(As the Eaglewings walk off, the camera zooms down the hole and you see the Farplane abyss and the fayth of Bahamut*the fayth that talked to Tidus in FFX*is walking around and looks shocked)

MEANWHILE IN THE FARPLANE ABYSS

Fayth: Oh no...the Farplane is starting to completely be overrun by shadows. I have to stop this...somehow. Ever since Shuyin took Vegnagun here things have been going on...

Auron: So, you're saying that there is a powerful force taking over the Farplane?

Fayth: Sir Auron? well yes...the shadows are gathering more and more energy from the Shadow palo and when the time comes, the Farplane will be swallowed up by darkness and Spira will be done for

Auron: is there anything we can do? should we go into the Underworld and check it out?

Fayth: hmmm...It seems that the Mako energy has been reacting strangely, I remember Vegnagun powered up by it but I'm pretty sure it didn't use this much of it. I think something powerful is draining this energy, and I think it's something in the Underworld

Auron: So Mako energy powers up something?

Fayth: Yes, if whatever it is drains all of the energy the Farplane will be no more and the living will all become weak and eventually die. And I think maybe after this...Sin could come back!

Auron: What? that is impossible! Sin can't come back! we defeated Yu Yevon twenty years ago! besides...who could bring him back?

Fayth: There was a spirit who escaped Eighteen years ago and went into the holes in the sky into the Upper world, he seems to possess some kind of dark powers that I've never seen before...I saw a glyph on his arm, I've seen it before but where?

Auron: Perhaps that spirit is the follower of the spirit who is causing these problems. maybe the powerful monster that is being summoned isn't Sin...maybe it's that huge shadow in the Underworld who no one ever speaks of

Fayth: Ah yes...him. He is still sleeping, he is the hatred and regrets of a young boy that has lived on and consumed his spirit. I think he might be the one who could call upon Sin and destroy Spira, and I think I know the three girls who are meant to stop this thing

Auron: Who?

Fayth: Simone, Nina and Chelsey, High summoner Yuna's daughters...they were born for a reason...they are to stop this creature and save Spira from oblivion. I believe they have powers so powerful that they don't even realize it. I think they might be the three angels of Eternal light, the three angels in those carvings I've seen in the Underworld. I must somehow get them to fall down here and go into the Underworld and destroy that shadow...

Auron: Hmm...whatever you say.(walks away and disappears)

(Now aboard the Phoenix, when you go to the bridge)

Yava: Hey Sam, you've been quiet

Chelsey: Yeah, what's wrong?

Sam: nothing, why?

Osric: You look like something's bothering you

Sam: Oh no I'm fine.(walks to the elevator)

Chelsey: I'll go talk to him. I'll be right back(goes to the elevator as well)

(When you go to the cabin)

Sam: Oww...my head hurts, what is going on? I need an explanation!

Chelsey: Hey you

Sam:(turns around)Oh, hey Chels...what's up?

Chelsey: Nothing, I was kinda worried about you, you didn't look so good and I wanted to see what was wrong

Sam: There's nothing wrong Chelsey, I'll be fine

Chelsey: Oh really, just a moment ago you were saying your head hurts...are you keeping something from me? I've told you that I'm a fiend speaker and all my other secrets but you won't tell me what's wrong with your head?

Sam: Chelsey, I'm fine. It's just I've been feeling weird ever since we saw Gryffidon back in Besaid

Chelsey: So there is something going on

Sam: No...I mean...yes fine there's something wrong you win!

Chelsey: Ha! I knew it!(then stops for a moment and turns away)Oh...I'm sorry Sam, I just realized that this is alot like when I was afraid to tell my Mom what was bothering me...I'm sorry, I was just worried and maybe my Mom was too for me

Sam: Hey it's okay, I'm glad you care about me but I'll be fine. You should worry more about yourself I mean, you've been keeping that secret from your parents for seven years

Chelsey: I know...I know my sisters wouldn't mind but my parents have fought evil forces and my Mom fought a shadow named Shuyin, but...if they were to find out I can communicate with these things...Oh I can't even think about it

Sam: Hey it's not all bad, sure fiend speakers have some kind of dark powers but if you use them in a good way you're technically not evil. And I'm sure you'll use it right you're a good girl, right?

Chelsey: Thanks Sam. You always were there for me, even back then

Sam: Well I am your friend right?

Chelsey: Of course...So what kind of dark powers do I have?

Sam: To tell you the truth I don't really know

Chelsey: Well, I've felt connected to Suka in the Pandora's cove and connected to Denya...what could this mean? Am I a demon and I don't know it?

Sam: I know quite alot but there are still alot of things I don't know or remember...like I said it's all still coming back

Chelsey: Well I hope we find out soon because I don't wanna wait at the last minute

Sam:(places an arm on her shoulder)Don't worry we'll find the truth.

(Then Sam and Chelsey walk to the elevator and head for the bridge)

Osric: Jackpot! we've got incoming sphere data from Hoennal woods!

Yava: Did you say Hoennal woods?

Simone: I'm sure he did Yav. Why do you care if it's Hoennal woods?

(Yava looks away)

Yava: That's my home. Well, was my home. That's where my tribe is. But they won't like me anymore

Chelsey: Why not? you're a cool person

Yava: I don't feel like explaining things anymore. I'll tell you when we get there

Osric: Suit yourself Yav

(in Hoennal woods)

Hoennal woods is an enchanted forest that was discovered eighteen years ago and was named a part of New Spira. the Penumbra tribe has settled there because they do not like the way people have been using machina. They actually believe Sin will come back

Yava: It's been so many years...I wonder if they'll still accept me

Simone: Why wouldn't they accept you?

Yava: Because...I'm one of you guys now. And you use machina right? our airship is a machina, everything we use is a machina. Just like our sphere players, sphere cameras, all that stuff. And my tribe abandoned it all and settled here thinking the rest of Spira are fools using machina. And if they see what I've become...they'll call me a traitor. They think that if we keep using machina, Sin will come back

Vidina: Don't they know about Lady Yuna bringing the Eternal calm?

Yava: Yes but, they still think Sin will come back

Nina: Whoa, talk about pressure

Yava: I'll say. Let's just find that sphere and get outta here

(when you go to a certain point in the woods, a group of Penumbra tribesmen come over pointing spears)

tribemember#1: Leave spherehunters! you are fools for using machina!

tribemember#2: Sin will come back because of stupid people like you!

Nina: Stupid? excuse me? Haven't you like heard the story of Lady Yuna's Eternal Calm?

tribemember#3: Yes, we have. But now the aeons are gone, if Sin comes back it'll kill us all!

Simone: Don't you know anything? Sin can't come back! The immortal Yu Yevon was killed and Sin is truly vanquished!

????: Stop at once!

(everyone turns to see a tall penumbra tribeman holding a huge spear)

????: I am the Penumbra tribe leader, and we will not allow spherehunters to travel farther in our woods!

Chelsey: Please sir! we mean no harm!

????: That was nothing to do with it! You foolish people use the machina and Sin will come back!

Simone: Sin can't come back! my mother brought the Eternal calm twenty years ago!

????: Lady Yuna is your mother?

Nina: Like duh! don't you know who we are?

????: Then if you are to pass, prove your strength!

AFTER BATTLE

????: Wow, you three are strong. You get your skills from your mother. I must introduce myself. I am Kastro, the leader of the Penumbra tribe

Yava: Kastro?(gasps)Father?

Kastro:(looks over)Why are you calling me father?

Yava: It's me! Yava!

Nina: That guy is your father? man I feel sorry for you

Kastro: Yava...I haven't seen you for eleven years. Your mother took you away from here because she wanted you to adapt to the ways of those foolish people. I thought I'd never see you again(walks over to Yava)

Yava: You don't hate me?

Kastro: of course not. Are these people your friends?

Yava: Yes, they are. Those three girls are Simone, Nina and Chelsey the daughters of High summoner Yuna. And my other friends are Vidina, Osric, Melanie and Sam

Kastro: I see. So, why are you here?

Yava: I'm a spherehunter now, and we're on a mission right now

Simone: we're looking for a sphere in this area

Kastro: Maybe we'll help. We shouldn't be but I want to spend time with my daughter. Men! let's go!

(as they walk through the woods)

Vidina: Is that why you left the tribe, your mother took you?

Yava: Yes. She didn't like the tribes ways anymore and she wanted me to live like everyone else

Nina: We are we going?

Kastro: We are going to the Dindu temple. I need to tell Yava about our customs so she learns about her lineage

Nina: Uh-uh...that's totally cool I guess

(After you reach Dindu temple)

Chelsey: Wow, this temple looks...so sublime...so exquisite!

Nina: Sure...whatever you said

Kastro: This is the Dindu temple. This is where we pray and teach our tribe members about our lineage, The name 'Dindu' came from a legendary warrior who fought Sin many years ago. Arkias Dindu did not like the use of machina of course and wanted to save mankind from total annihilation but everyone thought he was crazy and was eventually killed. But the penumbra tribe sees him as a hero and we worship him here in this temple

Chelsey: Wow, what a wonderful religion you have. Everyone else abandoned religion twenty-years ago

Kastro: Yes, I know. And now I shall tell you about our tribe

Simone:(yawns)This is so boring

Vidina: No kidding. It's like the discovery channel but live

Nina: Oh man, this is like more boring then when Mom gives us a lecture!

Melanie: I wanna go shopping!

Nina: I know like same here! I really need a new pair of shoes!

Kastro: 'Penumbra' is the light part of a shadow, and that's where our name came from. We are also the light standing in the darkness, we believe the people and their machina are the shadow and we're the light. So we are hoping that people will stop because Sin could come back. There are so many things we do not know about Spira, and the mysterious forces that are among us

Yava: Uh...father, do you know anything about the Underworld or the shadows?

Kastro: Hmmm, I've heard stories but I'm not sure if they're really true.

Sam: They are true. We saw five of the shadow lords so far

Kastro: You have? Spira is in danger. We must stop those shadows! I've heard stories that if the evil one is found he is destined to bring the shadows into our world and destroy the living. And there is an evil gem, the Shadow palo, that holds all the evil in the world. If the evil one claims it...all of the living will be destroyed!

Yava: And we're spherehunting to find more clues and save Spira! and the sphere that's here might have clues!

Kastro: We must search for it! The shadows are known to be the foulisets of the dead. They are filled with hate and evil, and dislike of the living. Even fiends fear them

Yava: Maybe the sphere's in this temple!

Kastro: You could be right, everyone! search for a movie sphere in this temple!
Yes chief!

(After you find the sphere in one of the chambers)

Simone: Found it guys!

Nina: The Eaglewings score!

(Back in the woods around a fire)

Kastro: So, let's watch the sphere

(Sphere turns on)

Timothy: Serena! where are you? Serena!

Serena: Over here!

Timothy: I can't find my little brother anywhere...what if those people took him? they have almost everyone in the village hostage!

Serena: Poor Samayo, he must be so scared by himself

Timothy: Well he's only seven, those fools will pay trying to kidnap my brother. Come on Serena let's fight them!

Serena: Okay(grabs out her two daggers and swings them)Let's go!

(Sphere turns off)

Simone: How useless! It was another sphere of Timothy and Serena! It wasn't a clue about the Shadow palo!

Kastro: There must be more clues. And how are you certain that Timothy and Serena have nothing to do with the Shadow palo?

Chelsey: Hmmm...wait a minute! Didn't Timothy make a palo? with the help of the Whistlers?

Vidina: Uh yes he did. But how does that help Chels?

Chelsey: Maybe Timothy's palo is the Shadow palo! Do you see where I'm getting at? why haven't I thought of that before? maybe Timothy's palo did the opposite of what it was supposed to do!

Sam: You're right(everyone looks at him)It's all coming back now...Timothy created a palo with the help of the Whistlers singing but after he died...his hate lived on and was formed within his palo which created the Shadow palo

Vidina: How is that possible ya?

Sam: I...forget. My mind's a little clouded right now

Simone: So Timothy does have something to do with the Shadow palo, all those spheres we found were all telling us something. We're meant to save Spira!

Kastro: I know you'll save it. We will help you out on saving Spira. we are excellent warriors. And we will not let Spira suffer! let us celebrate the coming of the new heroes!

Nina: Uh...what's that?

Kastro: A ceremony, we have trusted you with our lives and we must celebrate our faith in you

Nina: That's so rad...Oh snap! My hair is messy! do I look good?

Simone: Shut up

Nina:(sticks out her tounge)Make me!

Kastro: Let us begin!

(a few minutes later, a group of tribesmen walk over with torches and hand them to each of the Eaglewings and everyone in the tribe is gathered around)

Kastro: We are gathered here today to celebrate the coming of the new heroes, we are to place trust in these young ones and pray for them. They are to save Spira and bring peace to us all.

Young ones, raise your torches!

(The Eaglewings raise their torches)

Kastro: Behold Spira's future legends!

(everyone in the tribe raises their spears and cheers)

Kastro: Our prayers are with you. Good luck Eaglewings. And to you too, Yava

Yava: Thank you father

Kastro: And of course I'd like to thank the daughters of Lady Yuna

Nina: Oh they love me! they love me!

Simone: No they love us!

Nina: Shut up

Well it is near the end of my story now, all the bits and pieces started to come together like a puzzle. But there were pieces still left to be found, we were closer to finding the Shadow palo and the final battle. Now the real action begins!

CHAPTER FOUR IS COMPLETE!

6 - chapter five

(On the phoenix)

Osric: Man, all those spheres were all connected to the Shadow palo. And we have Sam here to tell us about it, it's like he was brought here for a reason

Nina: Yeah, I know. I wonder what's the truth about him

Osric: I wonder if he's some kinda spirit or something...

Simone:(yawns)We are so close, but when is the last Shadow lord gonna pop-up?

Vidina: Yeah when is it? It better be soon, ya? Because I'm so tired of waiting!

(Simone laughs)

Vidina: What?

Simone:(laughs)You always agree with what I say

Vidina: Hmmm. I guess I do

Melanie: Okay love birds, I want some action! But right now I feel like shopping!

Nina: Oh my gosh! same here!

Yava: Oh, we got a signal from our commsphere network. It's from someone in Silverdome city. Wanna check it out?

Simone: Sure, why not?

(When the commsphere network turns on and you see Jake)

Simone: J-Jake? Hey uh...what do you need?

Jake: Hey Simone, I just wanted to ask you if you're going to the magabike racing championship. I heard you're a good racer

Simone: Oh my gosh! I totally forgot! thanks for reminding me Jake!

Jake: No problemo. I'll be waiting the entrance of the megabike racing arena. I want to see you race and cheer you on

Simone: Thanks...we'll be there

Jake: Alright, see ya there

(the commsphere network turns off)

Simone: We're going to Silverdome city!

Vidina: But what about the search for the Shadow palo?

Simone: We'll hold it off for a bit. Come on you guys, Jake's gonna be there!

Yava: Well...I'll go but right after the megabike races then we're leaving

Melanie: Yeah I'm going!

Nina: Like me too! Silverdome City has the biggest mall and I'm so not missing out!

Osric: Well I might as well too

Chelsey:(standing next to Sam)Us too. I love Silverdome city!

(everyone looks at Vidina)

Vidina: Alright I'll go! As long as it doesn't take too long then we'll go

Osric: Alright we're right over the city! here we go!

(At Silverdome city)

Nina: Oh yeah! I looove this place. I can't believe Mom didn't want to live here, but then again she prefers quiet boring places...

Chelsey: Well, that's Mom

(When you arrive at the arena entrance)

Jake: Hey, Simone. Hey guys

Simone: H-hey Jake

Jake: Are you excited to race?

Simone: Of course! I've been racing since I was fifteen!

Jake: Oh...right. I wish you the best of luck(places a hand on Simone's shoulder)

Simone:(smiles and blushes)T-Thanks

Vidina: Okay pal that's enough. She has to go, ya?

Jake: Oh, of course good luck.(looks at Vidina and gives him a sly smile)

Simone: Thanks. See ya guys!

Yava: Go kick some @\$#!

Melanie: Yeah, go get e'm Kool Katt!

Simone:(giggles)Don't worry I will

(As she walks off Vidina looks at her and has a worried look on his face then turns to Jake to see him smiling suspiciously)

Vidina:(thinking)*What the hell is he up to?*

(Now in the megabike cages)

Simone:(gripping her handlebars)Come on Simone, you can do this!

announcer: Ladies and Gentlemen! the annual megabike racing championship has begun! And all of the best Megabike racers from all over Spira has gathered for this event. First we start with the alpha league which is the league for beginners, then the Beta league for those with little experience and of course the Delta league for the experts!

(A biker on a bike next to Simone starts talking)

Biker: Hey, good luck. After the other leagues race, the race begins.

Simone: Good luck to you too. I can't wait to race

(After a while)

announcer: Now the Beta racers have finished, may the Delta racers bring their bikes to the start line

Simone: Yes! It's starting! It's racing time!

(After all the races and you win the tournament while the announcer talks you see Simone waving to everyone holding the cup)

announcer: Congradulations to the youngest member in the league, Simone, the eldest daughter to high summoner Yuna a and a girl of only seventeen! And she's as good as she is! She will receive the Delta cup and is the official champion!

(Back at the arena gate)

Vidina: Wow Simone, you were great!

Nina: That was so totally wicked Sis! you made those suckers eat your dust!

Melanie: Yeah you like, so did!

Osric: You are so talented, you're a good singer and a megabike racer! oh and a good fighter!

Simone: Thanks guys, wait...where's Jake?

Sam: I dunno. Haven't seen him since you won

Yava: Yeah, I could've sworn he was with us

Chelsey: Hey look! a sphere on the ground! and it has the Mcclouds symbol on it...

Nina: Mcclouds symbol?

Simone: Let's see what it's about...

(when you turn on the sphere)

Mckelly: Ahem, hey there Chickenwings! you probably realized that Jake has gone missing by now...but he's with us as a hostage! we won't hurt him if you give us more info on the Shadow palo. But if you don't...You'll regret it. He's being held at the top floor in Silverdome heights, the tallest building in the

city. Give me the info there, tata for now! HAHAAHAHAHAHA...coughcough(takes puffer)Yeah, like I said haha

(Sphere ends)

Simone: Jake! we have to save him!

Vidina: We have more important things to do Simone! We'll get ourselves into something if we go there

Simone: But Vidina! I'm not gonna leave him there! I'm going to save him!

Nina: I'm like sooo helping!

Chelsey: Me too!

Yava: Don't forget us!

Sam: Man, this is so cool! we're going on a rescue mission!

Vidina: Come on you guys! You honestly want to save him?

Simone: Well I'm going to save him. Let's go Eaglewings!

Melanie: Those mccows are gonna taste bad milk!

Yava: Bad milk?

Melanie: Whatever

(The others run off)

Vidina: Oh fine I'll go!(runs after the others)

(In Silverdome heights)

Chelsey: Whoa, this place is huge! And so fancy!

Simone: Okay we have to split up, they might have something planned so best not be together. Nina and Chelsey go with me, Melanie sticks with Yava and the boys stick together, got it?

All: Got it!

Simone: Let's go!

(When you arrive at the top floor, Jake is standing with his back facing Simone and her sisters)

Simone: Jake! You're okay!

Jake:(turns around)Of course I'm okay, why wouldn't I be?

Simone: They kidnapped you! And they're gonna hurt you if we don't get outta here!

Jake:(laughs)You still haven't figured it out haven't you, Simone?

Simone:(blinks surprised)Figured out what?

Mckelly: You really are pathetic aren't you?(walks from out of nowhere and stands beside Jake)

Simone: Mckelly! Stay away from him!

Mckelly: Why should I?(points a gun at Simone, Nina and Chelsey)

(Then Jake takes out a gun and points it at the girls as well)

Nina: Uh...dude you're like pointing the gun the wrong way hehehehe...

Jake: No I'm not. Simone, I'm with the Mcclouds

Simone: WHAT?

Mckelly: Jake never was your boyfriend, he never liked you. He was spying on you. Jake is really my boyfriend and has been for two years!(She and Jake kiss)

Chelsey: You're a witch!

Jake: Maybe next time, Simone

Simone:(clenches her fist)You betrayed me

Jake: No, I was with Mckelly the whole time. You're the traitor, you have no idea what you got you and your friends into.

Mckelly: My father needs you three for his plans. That's why we're here! Boys! grab them!

(The Wattson brothers come over and try to tie up the girls)

Simone: Oh no you don't!(jumps into the air and kicks Simon)

Simon: You wanna fight huh? Okay, we'll fight!

AFTER BATTLE

(The girls are on the ground passed out)

Nick: Yes! we actually won! It's a miracle!

Charlie: Those girls finally got what they deserved!

Simon: Ha! they sure did!

Mckelly: Alright boys, carry them to the ship. We have to bring them to the Fiona plains by tomorrow night, my father is waiting

Jake: We finally did it love, your father's plan will work and Spira will suffer!

Mckelly: You're right. First I have to call my father(calls her father on her cellphone)Father, we have them! we're on our way!

????: Excellent job Mckelly. You too Jake, we have succeeded. I'll see you at the Fiona plains

Mckelly: Of course Daddy. Alright let's go men!

(A bunch of lizard brutes come over with the Eaglewings)

lizard: Look! we found their friends!

Vidina: Where's Simone? where is she?(then spots Simone lying on the ground)SIMONE!(runs over to her body)Simone, wake up! wake up!

Jake: She's fine, she just passed out. I told you to watch your back, HAHAAHAHAHAHAHAHAHAHA

Vidina:(glares)You asshole!(Goes to punch Jake but he misses and a lizard brute grabs him)LET ME GO! I'LL GET YOU JAKE! YOU'LL PAY!

Jake: Uh-huh, sure I will!(goes over to Simone and picks her up and carries her)

Mckelly: Alright to the Fiona plains!

(After a while, you see the Mccloud airship take off into the night sky and Mckelly and Jake are standing on the deck and Jake is holding Simone)

To tell you the truth I was surprised what had happened, But if this never happened, what was going to happen next would've never happened either...

MEANWHILE IN BESAID

(You see the outside of Tidus and Yuna's house then you see Yuna moving around in bed)

Yuna:(in her sleep)What do you want from me? What do you want!

(Yuna's dream starts)

(You see the girls running from a huge hooded figure screaming)

girls: Mom! Help!

Yuna: Girls! I'm coming!(runs after them then they disappear and six glyphs appear in the darkness)What the- the glyphs!

(Then an image of the Shadow palo appears and then a bunch of Whistlers fly around Yuna)

Yuna: What are they?(then shows the sun being eclipsed and Spira is in pure darkness)An eclipse?

(Then Seymour appears out of nowhere laughing)

Seymour: I will get my revenge on you, Yuna...MUAHAHAHAHAHAHA!

(Then you see Simone, Nina and Chelsey falling into darkness screaming)

Yuna: GIRLS!!!!

(Then you see an island, Timothy and Serena, then a huge shadow-demon creature and then she hears someone shout "Yuna!" then Yuna wakes up)

Yuna: Whoa...what a weird dream. It was like the other one I had.(breathes hard)

Tidus: Yuna...are you okay? You were moving around like crazy

Yuna: Oh sorry honey...I had a bad dream(sits up in bed)

Tidus: What was it about?

Yuna: Well...The girls were screaming and they were falling into darkness, then the sun was being eclipsed and...I saw Seymour

Tidus: Seymour? Why would he be in your dream?

Yuna: Well, he said: "I will get my revenge on you, Yuna". But how would he get his revenge on me? What if he's still alive? Maybe that's what my dreams have been telling me!

Tidus: Yuna, he can't be alive. You sent him to the Farplane twenty years ago, he can't come back. Just go to sleep, it's just a dream after all. And besides, I'm right here I won't let anything happen to you

Yuna:(sighs)I guess you're right, Tidus

(Then Scruff starts barking)

Tidus: Shut-up Dog!

Yuna: Tidus, Scruff's trying to tell us something!

Tidus: Like what? we don't even know what he's saying! he's a dog!

(Then they hear a thump)

Yuna: There's someone downstairs! Show us Scruff!

(Scruff runs towards the stairs growling)

Tidus:(grabs his sword)Alright let's go!

Yuna:(nods and grabs her staff)Try not to be noisy okay?

(Tidus, Yuna and Scruff walk slowly down the stairs and spot a person in the dark)

Tidus: Hey! get out of our house!(Jumps off the stairs and gets ready to swing his sword and the person is Pacce)

Pacce: AAAAHHHHH!

Tidus:(swings his sword and it misses Pacce)Oh my gosh! Pacce! I'm so sorry, I didn't know it was-

Pacce: It's alright, I'm sorry for sneaking in here like that. I thought you wouldn't mind if I just walked in

Yuna: Pacce...why are you here at this time of night? Shouldn't you be looking over the Youth league?

Pacce: There is something I need to tell you my lady. It is very upsetting, the Youth league got a message from Shinra corp that they saw something tragic on their commsphere network and told one of us to tell you

Tidus: What?

Pacce: Your daughters...they were kidnapped in Silverdome city

Yuna: My babies! We have to save them!

Pacce: Their friends were kidnapped as well. The kidnappers were an organization known as the Mcclouds, and they took them on an airship I believe somewhere around Mt. Gagazet, I'm not sure

Yuna: We have to tell everyone, including Wakka and Lulu since Vidina was kidnapped too

Tidus: Right, let's go!

(When you go to the temple, a scene begins. Yuna is standing in front of her father's statue and Wakka and Lulu are with Tidus)

Yuna: What can I do father? my daughters are in danger and I don't know how I'm going to save them...(her eyes fill with tears)I'm so worried

Lulu:(crying)Poor Vidina, I hope he's okay. We gotta save him!

Wakka: Nobody takes my son! Nobody!

Tidus: Don't worry, we'll rescue him and his friends. I hope the girls are okay...

Yuna: How will we catch up to the kidnappers? they're on an airship, and there's no way we can catch them on a ferry

Lulu: Don't Rikku, Brother and Cid have an airship? the Celsius?

Yuna: Yes, they do! Good thinking Lulu, I'll call Rikku in a few minutes

Priest: Good luck on saving your daughters Lady Yuna. Before you leave we must have a ceremony to wish you good luck

Yuna: Thank you. Now, I must go home and call Rikku. Come on guys!

(Yuna, Tidus, Lulu and Wakka walk out of the temple)

(Now at sunrise, the leaving ceremony starts. Yuna walks out of the temple with her hair in a bun a beautiful high summoner dress on with a shiny cape and is wearing shiny black high heels and stands in front of everyone holding her staff)

Yuna: People of Besaid, as you've heard my daughters and their friends have been kidnapped last night, and I am leaving Besaid until I have found them. I will pray for all of you to make sure you're safe, I might not even come back at all, I might die on the way. So, wish me luck

(Everyone bows their heads as Yuna along with Tidus, Lulu and Wakka walk past them, then the Celsius comes down from the sky and hovers over the island)

Lulu: Finally, they're here

(The huge door latch opens and Rikku jumps down to the ground)

Rikku: Hey everyone! Ready to rescue them?

Yuna: You bet I am Rikku

Rikku: Oh my gosh! Yunie, I loooove your dress! Can I borrow it one day? It's soooo gorgeous!

Yuna:(brushes her dress)One day you can, it is nice. So, who else is with you?

Rikku: Uh...Paine, Brother, and my Dad. That's it really

Tidus: Hey, Rikku! Thanks for giving us a lift

Rikku: No problemo. Anything for you guys. Oh...Yunie...You shouldn't wear that dress...

Yuna: Why?

Rikku: You might get it wrecked. We have time go get changed

Tidus: Come on! we don't have much time!

Yuna: Oh...right(picks up her dress and Tidus helps her climb aboard the Celsius)

Wakka: Wow, I love this ship! And this is the first time I get to go on it for awhile, ya?

Lulu: Stop wasting time, Wakka. Let's go

(Everybody goes on the Celsius and the latch closes and takes off)

(In the Celsius)

Rikku: Whooo-hooo! Full speed ahead! Yeaaaahhhhhooooooooo!

Brother: Lyms tufh, Rikku(Calm down Rikku)

Paine: So, they're around Mt. Gagazet right?

Yuna:(nods)Right

Cid: Boy, it's been awhile since I've been on a rescue mission. I'm getting old now and this might be my last journey

Tidus: And it'll be a great one! If anyone stands in our way, we take them on!

Wakka: Now you're talking!(high fives with Tidus)

Paine: Save your energy Tidus, you're gonna need it to kick @\$\$

Tidus: Oh right

Yuna:(walks over to Cid)How long will it take to reach Mt. Gagazet?

Cid: It depends, Yuna. Don't worry we'll get 'em!

Rikku: Yeah no need to worry Yunie, we'll find them!

Yuna:(nods then walks to the huge window and stares out thinking)*Don't worry girls, I'm coming*

MEANWHILE ON THE MCCLLOUD AIRSHIP

(Simone, Nina and Chelsey are in a little jail cell and Simone slowly wakes up)

Simone:(looks around)Where Am I?(gets up)What is this place? Nina, Chelsey, wake up!

Nina:(wakes up)Uh...Why are we like in a jail cell?

Chelsey:(wakes up)Uh...Where are we?

Simone:(looks at the wall and sees the Mccloud symbol)We're in the Mccloud ship! they've captured us!

Nina: Grrrrreat. How are we gonna get out?

Chelsey:(looks up and spots a vent)Hey! we can crawl through that vent! Maybe the others are on the

other side!

Simone: Maybe, okay, into the vent!

(The girls jump up and go into the vent then crawl through it, then they go through an opening and there are three vents)

Simone: Okay, we're gonna have to split up, and we'll meet each other somewhere okay?

Nina+Chelsey: Okay!

Simone: Let's go!

(Each of the girls go down a vent and you see Simone go down and land in a hallway)

Simone: Alright here I go!

(After you reach the elevator and then you see Nina land in the food court)

Nina: Of all places! I like hope I don't get caught. And something smells good

(After you reach elevator and you see Chelsey land in the engine room)

Chelsey: Great, I'm in the engine room! Well, I'm here and might as well go on!

(After you reach the elevator and the girls reunite)

Nina: Chelsey! You made it!

Simone: Now, where are the others?

Melanie: Psst. Guys, over here!

(Simone looks around then spots a jail cell with the others)

Chelsey: Are you guys alright?

Vidina: Yeah, we're fine. Just get us out!

Chelsey: Hold on, we have the key. I stole it from one of the guards.(unlocks jail cell and Mckelly, Gawk, and the Wattson brothers show up)

Mckelly: How did you escape???

Nina: We're not telling you!

Mckelly: You three are so dead! I won't let you escape, my father needs you for his plan and I won't let him down!

Gawk: Yeah! Chicken wings!

Simone: Tell your Dad to kiss my @\$ \$!

Yava: Oh! that's a burn!

Mckelly: YOU'RE GOING TO PAY FOR THAT!

AFTER BATTLE

Mckelly: You may have won but that'll be your last time!

HAHAHAHAHAHAHAHAHA...coughcough(takes puffer)

Simon: Boss! we've arrived at the Fiona plains!

Mckelly: Good. Boys, hold on to these troublemakers and bring them to my father!

Nick: Yes, boss!

(At the Fiona plains at nighttime)

Nina: Ow! Stop pulling my hair!

lizard brute: Shut-up and keep moving!

(Mckelly walks to a hooded man)

Mckelly: Father, we brought them

?????: Excellent, you've done well Mckelly. I'm proud of you.(looks at the girls)Ah, the daughters of Lady Yuna

Simone:(glares)What do you want with us?

?????:(laughs)I need you and your sisters for a plan. A plan to take over Spira

Chelsey: We won't join you! And you can't make us!

?????: That's not it.(looks at Simone)Simone isn't it? You're the oldest I presume?

Simone: Yeah, I am. Why do you care?

????:(smiles)The reason why you're here is because I need your lives, you three hold the fighting skills of both your parents and are very powerful. And if I take your lives, I will become invincible and so will my god. You three are sacrifices

Nina: What? Nuh-uh, no way! We won't let you take our lives!

????: It's not up to you. You see, it's not really your fault, it's your mother's fault. You can blame her for all of this. Twenty years ago, that's when it all started. I was an innocent soul trying to help out your mother try to stop Sin but no, she had to do things her own way and ruined my life. She will suffer, but right now, you three must die

Simone:(takes out her sword)My mother would never do such a thing! You're lying, you may want our lives but you're not having them!

????:(laughs)Such a foolish child you are, as foolish as your father

Simone: That's it!(charges at ???? with her sword then jumps into the air ready to strike him but ???? raises his hand and blasts Simone with a thunder spell and she screams as she is flung back onto the ground and she is unconscious)

Vidina: SIMONE!(runs to Simone's body but Jake jumps out in front of him holding a black and red sword with weird glyphs on it)

Jake: Tsk tsk. You care for her yet you can't save her. What a pity, you are weak, you are no match for the powers of darkness!

Vidina: GET OUT OF MY WAY!

Jake:(looks at ???? who nods at him then Jake nods back then strikes Vidina with his sword and strange lightning comes out of it)WEAKLING!

Chelsey: VIDINA!

Osric: OH NO DINE!

(then Vidina passes out and falls to the ground)

Jake: He's not dead, but he is unconscious. He will die soon though. You're all weaklings, all of you

Chelsey: H-How could you do this? To my sister and my friend? You're soul has been swallowed by your greed for power, now your soul no longer exists...

????: What the hell are you talking about little girl? He is powerful...his dark powers are quite useful you see, He has been quite useful. But now you're all starting to get on my nerves...Guards! take the girls to the tower and lock up their friends away from them.

guards: Yes sir!(The guards grab Nina and Chelsey and drag them to the tower)

Nina: Ow! my hair!

Chelsey: Please! let us go!

(Then Jake picks up Simone's body and carries her to the tower)

????: Revenge is sweet. HAHAAHAHAHAHAHAHAHA

MEANWHILE ON THE CELSIUS

Cid: Hey! we got a signal! It's from Mt. Gagazet!

Tidus: A signal? and aren't we heading for Mt. Gagazet?

Rikku: It means we're close by! we're gonna save the girls and their friends!

Lulu: That's good. We should be prepared just incase we have to fight

Paine: Wait, doesn't Kimahri have an army of ronso warriors?

Rikku: Oh yeah! Paine and I visited him last week!

Yuna: Kimahri...I haven't seen him for such a long time

Wakka: Why don't we ask Kimahri and his warriors to join us? Just incase we end up in a huge battle, ya?

Yuna: Sounds great. And then we'll search for the girls!

Tidus: Yeah! this will be a piece of cake!

Cid: Brother! On to Gagazet!

Brother: Oac, Vydran!(Yes, Father!)

(At Mt.Gagazet gates, when you walk to Kimahri)

Yuna:(runs over)Kimahri!

Kimahri: Yuna!

Yuna:(hugs Kimahri)I missed you you big furball

Kimahri: Kimahri miss Yuna. Why is Yuna and friends here?

Tidus:(walks over)We're on a rescue mission. Our children have been kidnapped and we're going to save them!

Yuna: Do you know where they might be? All we know that they were taken on an airship

Kimahri: Kimahri see big airship fly over Gagazet last night. Heading straight for Fiona plains

Tidus: Fiona plains?

Paine: It's a part of New Spira and also a part of Gagazet. Remember that huge space between Gagazet and Zanarkand? that's where the Fiona plains is

Tidus: Well, let's go!

Lulu: What about the warriors?

Yuna: Oh right...Kimahri, would you like to join us? And your warriors as well?

Kimahri: Kimahri do anything for Yuna. Follow Kimahri to summit and head for Fiona plains)

Yuna:(nods and smiles)Everyone, let's go!

(When you arrive at the summit region)

Kimahri: It is nighttime, Kimahri bring warriors(a group of ronso warriors stand behind him)

Tidus: Whoa, they're pretty mean looking. And where did Cid go with the Celsius?

Lulu: He said he was going to check for clues and let us know but that's all he told me

Wakka: Man we are prepared. Those warriors seem pretty tough, ya?

Tidus:(patts Kimahri's arm)So, where do we go?

Kimahri:(points ahead)Over there

Rikku: Oh yeah! It's party time!(runs ahead)Come on Yunie!

Yuna:(giggles)I'm coming!

Tidus: Let's go guys!

(In a path full of crystal trees)

Rikku: Brrr. This place is pretty but it sure is cold!

Lulu: It almosts resembles Macalania woods. Only some parts are forested, most are just empty plains

Paine: I wonder what kind of fiends live here?

Wakka: Beats me. Why would the kidnappers take the children here, ya?

Tidus: Maybe they were expecting us. Maybe they wanted us to find them for a reason

Yuna:(sighs)I just hope the girls are alright. What kind of a person would want my girls?

(Then you see a rushing figure in the bushes)

Paine: What the hell was that?

Rikku: Maybe it was a fiend!

Lulu:(looks up and spots someone in a tree)They've been watching us all along!

Yuna: Are you sure it's them?

Lulu: I think so!

Tidus:(swings his sword)Hey! Show yourself!

Kimahri: It's headed that way!

(After Yuna and the others run ahead, you see the lizard brute turn to another direction and then minutes later he arrives at the Mcclouds site)

lizard brute: Sir! I spotted Lady Yuna and her entourage! They've found out where we are!

????: Well isn't that promising?

lizard brute: Should we ambush her?

????: No, do not harm her. I have business with Lady Yuna that I need to discuss

Mckelly: Daddy, I'm Boooooooooored

????: Will be quiet Mckelly? if you're a good girl I'll give you a cookie

Mckelly: YAYYYYY!

Jake: Hey if this Lady Yuna shows up what are we gonna do?

????: Didn't you hear me? I need to talk to her. But after then you can do what you want with her friends

Jake:(holding his blade)Don't worry, I know exactly what to do

(Now you see Yuna and the others running through the woods then Tidus stops)

Tidus: Oh, I'm sooo tired! Maybe we should rest for a bit...I mean we're probably close

Lulu: We'll rest only for a bit. They could take off

Rikku: Well who's gonna start the fire?

Wakka: Tidus and I will get the firewood

Tidus: Yeah, be right back

(After you collect the firewood, a scene starts with everyone sitting around a fire)

Yuna:(thinking)*Oh, girls please be safe*

Tidus: You worried?

Yuna:(sighs)Of course I'm worried! My heart is pounding really fast. I'm very worried...I can't stop thinking about them

Tidus: To tell you the truth me neither. But don't worry, we'll save them

Rikku: I'm so tired. I need more time to rest

Yuna: No!(everyone looks at her)No more rest. I want my daughters! I want to make sure they're safe! And I'm not resting until I find them! I love them more than anything!

Paine: Now that's a mother!

Rikku: We're with you Yunie!

(everyone cheers)

Yuna:(smiles)Now let's go save our loved ones!

(When you're out of the woods and you arrive at the Mccloud site)

Tidus: Look! I see them!

Yuna: Hey you! where's our loved ones?

(???? turns around)

????: Men! surround them!

(The lizard men surround Yuna and the others)

????: Lady Yuna, it's been twenty years

Yuna: Who are you?

Wakka: Where are the kids?

????: Oh, the other children aren't that important to me. They'll live

Tidus: Where are my daughters?

????: So Yuna, I see you married that idiot and together you had three girls

Yuna: Your voice...It seems so familiar

????: Don't you remember me Yuna? You ruined my life! And I'm your worst enemy!(takes off his hood and he's a guado man with scars all over his face)

Tidus+Yuna: SEYMOUR!

Seymour: Yes it is me, shocked aren't you?

Yuna: But...But how? I sent you to the Farplane twenty years ago!

Seymour: Yes, but I managed to escape! After you defeated Vegnagun, you forgot to close the holes it made. Thanks to you, I escaped from those holes and came into the living world to do what I was supposed to do: Destroy Spira

Yuna:(glares)What have you done with my daughters?

Seymour: Your daughters are still alive...for now! MUAHAHAHAHAHAHAHAHAHA! When I am ready, and have found the Shadow palo, I will call upon my god and steal the lives of your daughters and my God and I will become invincible!

Yuna: No! I won't allow it!(eyes fill with tears)

Seymour: It is a pity though, If only you listened to me and helped me twenty years ago. None of this would've happened.

Yuna:(shakes her head while crying)No, No! Please! let them go! I'll do anything! Please don't kill them, I love them!

Seymour: It's too late, this is my way of getting revenge on you

Yuna:(crying)my dreams were right...they were right all along...they were telling me you'd come back and drag my little girls into darkness...

Tidus: Yuna! don't listen to him! send him!

Yuna:(wipes her tears)Right!(grabs her staff and starts sending Seymour then he raises his hand and makes her stop)

Seymour: How pitiful. A mother's love, touching but foolish. Men! get rid of these fools!

(A bunch of Lizards and Guado appear)

Tidus: You won't get away with this, Seymour!

Yuna:(crying)What do we do now? He's going to kill my babies!

Lulu: Why don't we hold the guards off while you find the girls and their friends and free them!

Kimahri: We fight! warriors! battle!

(everyone fights while Yuna runs off)

Yuna: I'm coming, girls!

(When you're near the tower a scene starts)

MEANWHILE IN A DUNGEON

Yava: Come on Dine! wake up!

Osric: Man, Jake really hurt him didn't he?

Yava: Yeah, I tried every healing spell I know but it won't work

Melanie: What if he's dead...what will we tell Simone? heck even his parents?

Osric: I don't know...He was a great guy, and a good friend. I only wish that jackass Jake never struck him...Why did we trust him?

Sam: Well, you didn't know anything about him so it's not your fault...

Osric: Yeah...I hope Vidina's still alive...I just hope...

(Vidina moves a little)

everyone: VIDINA!

(Now meanwhile up in the tower, the girls are all chained up)

Nina:(singing)Itsy bitsy spider went up the water spout, down came the rain and washed the spider out, out came the sun and dried up all the rain and the itsy bitsy spider went up the spout again

Simone: SHUT-UP! Sheesh, you've been singing kiddy songs for an hour now!

Nina: Well I'm trying to cheer myself up

Chelsey: What, by annoying us?

Nina: Duh! So...what do you think of Mckelly's father? I think he's kinda creepy. And psycho

Simone: Too bad we don't really know what he looks like, he has that hood covering his face. But he's probably ugly. Maybe that's why Mckelly's so ugly

Nina: I want my Mommy!

Chelsey: She doesn't know that we're here though. So she can't save us

Simone: Well maybe she could, Mom has her motherly instincts

Nina: I want to go home! I'm gonna keep singing until someone comes and rescues us

Simone: If you keep singing again...I'm gonna kick your @\$#!

Nina: You can't your chained up so bite me!(sticks out her tounge)

Simone: Alright that's it!

Chelsey: Guys, stop! Arguing isn't going to solve anything! we'll just have to wait. If no one comes, then we're screwed

Simone:(rolls her eyes)Whatever

(Outside of the tower)

Yuna: So, this is where they are? Well, this better be the place

(When you go into the tower then go to the very top of the stairs then you see two lizard guards)

guard#1: Hey, did you hear footsteps?

guard#2: No, why?

guard#1: Are you honestly that deaf? We're on a lookout for Lady Yuna, she's here to save her daughters remember? That could've been her!

Yuna:(hiding behind a corner)(thinking)*Hmmm. They don't seem too smart. Maybe I can fool them*(walks over to the guards)

guard#2:(points his gun)Hey lady! who are you? and why are you here?

guard#1: Hey, aren't you that High Summoner Lady Yuna chick?

Yuna: Uh...(thinking)*Come on Yuna, think of something*

guard#1: Well?

Yuna: Oh no, I just look like her. I'm one of Lord Seymour's messenger ladies. He sent me here to watch the prisoners so you can help fight those fools outside.(does a curtsy)My name is...Yoko

guard#2: Really? Well, here's the keys Yoko.(gives Yuna the keys)Make sure those brats don't escape!

Yuna: Brats? they're my-uh...uh...Right. Don't worry I will!

guard#1: Alright! let's go!

(the two lizard guards take off and Yuna walks off)

(When you go to the dungeon)

Simone: Hey, I hear footsteps

Nina: Oh no! what if it's that Guado dude?

Chelsey: Oh no! I don't want ti die! there's so much I could've done with my life!

Simone: Nina, Chelsey I love you guys!

Nina: The footsteps are getting louder...and louder and....AAAHHHHHHH!

(the girls scream and Yuna appears)

Yuna: GIRLS!

Simone: Mom? uh...what are you doing here?

Chelsey: Mom! we're soooo glad you're here!

Nina: Whoa, he sounds alot like Mom. And looks like Mom too! boy he's good

Simone: Nina, it is Mom

Nina: Well, how do you know?

Yuna:(giggles)Honey, it is me.(takes out the keys and unlocks each of the girl's chains)Don't worry, we'll be heading out soon. I'm taking you home

Nina:(stands in front of Yuna)Well, I don't think it's Mom. Prove it!

(Then Yuna hugs the girls tightly)

Nina: Okay it's her

Simone: Can't...breathe...

Yuna:(lets the girls go)Are you three okay? Did he hurt you? I was so worried about all of you

Simone: We're fine Mom. How did you get here anyways? And how did you find out we were here?

Yuna: I flew here

Nina: What you have wings?

Chelsey: It means she came here on an airship, Nina

Nina: Oh. Go on

Yuna: Ahem. Well, back home in Besaid, I was told that you three and your friends were spotted being kidnapped on a commsphere and taken on an airship here.(smiles)You know I'd never let anything happen to any of you

Simone: Yeah, that Guado dude wanted our lives so he could become "invincible"

Yuna: Guado dude? oh right. I knew him from the past...twenty years ago

Simone: You did? What's his name?

Yuna: His name is, Seymour

Nina: Seymour? you never told us about him

Yuna: I know.(turns around and walks to a ledge and sits down)There's something I need to tell you, girls. There's a reason why Seymour hates me. Um...twenty years ago, Seymour was one of the maesters of Yevon

Nina: Ooooh I love stories!

Chelsey: Why you never read, well because you can't read

Nina: Sure I can! Well, I like it when Mom tells stories

Simone: what's a maester?

Yuna: a maester was one of the leaders of Spira. There were four maesters: Mika, Kinoc, Kelk and Seymour. But they hid secrets from Spira and betrayed us all. Seymour had asked me to talk to him in Guadosalam during my pilgrimage. And well...he...uh...he asked me to marry him!

girls: WHAT?!

Yuna: I was as shocked as you are now. Then later, I found a sphere of Seymour's father Jyscal and I realized Seymour had killed Jyscal. So I decided not tell your father or my guardians about it until it was all over. I wanted Seymour to be turned in the court of Yevon. So I went with him to the Macalania temple and spoke with him there

Simone: Then what?

Yuna: Your father and my guardians showed up and they found out about Seymour killing Jyscal.

Seymour was about to fight them but then I fought too because my guardians were my friends and I couldn't watch them be hurt. Then after...I killed him

Simone: I never say this but...Go Mom!

Yuna:(giggles)Anyways...um...It wasn't really the best moment.(while she talks you see a flashback from FFX of Yuna and the others surrounding Seymour dead)We were branded traitors. So the Guado chased us out of the temple and we fell deep into the lake ice. Then Sin appeared and we all got separated

Nina: Then what?

Yuna:(sighs)The Guado had captured me in the Bikaniel desert and brought me to Bevelle, along with Seymour who was an unsent now and he made me marry him. So I just went along with it because that was my chance to send him. Then your father and my guardians showed up but before he could save me, I kissed Seymour...

(Girls drop their mouths open at the same time)

Nina: EEEWWWWWWW!

Chelsey: Gross!

Simone: Was there any mouth wash?

Yuna:(smiles)No there wasn't...Then later on inside of Sin we fought Seymour for the last time and I finally sent him. So that's why he's willing to get revenge on me...

Chelsey: You sent him? Then what is he doing here?

Yuna:(shakes her head)I don't know Chels. He said he escaped from a hole that Vegnagun made...(stands up)Well, let's go.(starts walking towards the stairs)Come on girls! we're going home!

Simone: Home? now?

Yuna:(giggles)Of course sweetie. Where did you think we were going?(walks down the stairs and the girls follow her)

I didn't want to go home yet, I wanted to finish off Seymour and stop whatever he had planned. But the look on Mom's face, her smile, I could tell she really was glad to have us back. So I just kept my mouth shut for a while...

(When you down the stairs and outside of the tower)

Tidus:(runs over panting)You found them! Wakka and Kimahri rescued the other kids.(then he falls down and Yuna panicks and runs over to him)

Yuna: You have a big wound on your arm. Are you okay, honey?

Tidus: Yeah, I'm fine...OW!

Yuna: Stand still I'll heal it.(closes her eyes and rubs her hand on the wound and uses a healing spell)There, feel better?

Tidus: Yeah thanks Yuna.(tries to stand up then Yuna helps him up then he looks at the girls)So, are you three okay?

Simone: Never better!

Tidus: That's good. Cid should be here any minute, we'll be home soon enough

(Rikku and Paine run over)

Simone: Aunt Rikku!

(the girls run over to Rikku)

Rikku: Hey girls! Are you guys okay?

Nina: Of course Aunt Rikku!

Rikku: In a few minutes, my Dad'll be here and we can get outta here!

Paine: Cid better hurry, more of those lizards could come

(Then everyone else walks over)

Melanie: Guys!(waving her hand)

Yava: You're okay!

(The girl's friends run over)

Vidina: Uh...You okay Simone?

Simone:(nods)Yep. Why were you worried about me?

Vidina: Uh...yeah well, you're my friend I'm supposed to worry right?

Simone:(giggles)Oh, Dine. You always were a worry wart

Vidina: Hey that's not funny, ya?

Osric: We thought that Mckelly's Dad killed you guys. We were worried

Simone: well we found out his name's Seymour, and he's a foe of my mom's past

Wakka:(pats Vidina's back)Oh boy, can't wait to go home, ya?

Lulu: Me neither. I'm glad everyone's safe

(Tidus and Yuna walk over and stand by the girls)

Yuna: Me too. Oh, and Chels...you can tell me about that story you're working on too. On the way home

Chelsey: How do you know about it?

Yuna: You left it at home and I read some of it. It's pretty good actually

Chelsey: Uh...Thanks(hugs Yuna)I'm so glad to be with my family again. I can't wait to go home!

Yuna:(hugs Chelsey)Me neither

Seymour:(laughs)keep dreaming!

(Everyone turns around to see Seymour, Mckelly, Gawk, Jake and the lizard and guado men)

Nina:(whispers to Chelsey)Ewww I can't believe he kissed Mom! he's like sooo ugly! gross!

Chelsey: Tell me about it

Tidus:(draws his sword)Seymour!

Yuna:(steps forward with her arm out)Girls! stay back!

Simone: Why? we can take him

Yuna: I said stay back!

Seymour: A family reunion I see, to tell you the truth, I kinew you'd come here and rescue your daughters, Yuna. You aren't like other mothers, you'd travel far from home just to see your daughters again. But I'm not letting you get away with them. I need their lives! men, grab the girls!

Yuna: Oh no! GIRLS! RUNNNNNNNN!!!

Simone: No! I'm gonna fight!

Tidus: Just listen to your mother and run!

Chelsey: Simone, come on!

Simone:(looks at everyone then nodd)Okay, let's go!

(The girls run off)

Vidina: Come on guys, I'm going with them!(runs off)

Osric: Hey! wait up Dine!

(Vidina and his friends run after the girls)

Seymour: You can run but you can't hide!

Tidus: Alright everyone, we fight them and then go after our young ones, okay?

Wakka: Right Brudda!

(Now you see Simone running but then she stops to take a break)

Simone: Why am I running? I should be fighting!

Nina: Well, that Seymour guy would have like totally killed us if we didn't run

Simone: But I'm not a coward!(takes out her sword)I fight back!

Chelsey:(sighs and shakes her head)Give it a rest Simone. Mom, Dad and the others will catch up to us later. Right now we have to hide

(After you go halfway through the forest)

Vidina: Guys!!!

(The girls turn around)

Nina: You guys were following us?

Vidina: Yeah, I wanted to talk to Simone

Simone: What for?

Vidina: Just come with me

everyone: Ooooooohhhh

Vidina: It's nothing like that! come on Kool Katt, come with me

(Now you see a scene start with Simone and Vidina talking)

Simone: You were right, Dine. About Jake, he was one of the Mcclouds all along. I should've listened to you...I'm sorry. I feel like such an idiot

Vidina: No, Simone...you didn't know. It's okay I forgive you. I should apologize for being jealous everytime you date someone

Simone:(smiles and giggles)So, you admit it?

Vidina:(scratches the back of his head)Uh...it's not that easy to uh...say uh...I just don't want anything to interfere with our friendship, ya?

Simone:(smiles)Uh-huh sure

Vidina: Hey I'm serious, ya? It's just things haven't been easy for me since we became teens...I dunno it's hard to say

Simone: Well um...

(the others show up)

Nina: Are you guys like done yet? we have to keep going!

Melanie: Yeah, are you sure you guys aren't talking about something else?

Vidina: Alright Alright let's go!

(Everyone starts walking and Osric walks beside Nina)

Osric: Hey, Nina

Nina: Hey Ozzy. So, what do you need?

Osric: Oh, Uh...I wanted to ask you if you were okay...

Nina: Of course I'm okay! are you alright Ozzy?

Osric: Yeah, I just uh...oh never mind

(When you go out of the woods)

Chelsey: Let's wait here. Our parents are probably on their way now

Sam: We gotta find the Shadow palo! Seymour and the others will find it if we go home!

Simone: Yeah, I know. What are we gonna tell our parents?

Nina+Melanie:(shrug)I dunno

Yava: Tell them that uh...we really have to find the Shadow palo and if Seymour does, we're doomed!

Vidina: Hey look! our parents! Heyyyy!!!

(the girls and their friends wave to the adults)

Wakka: You guys made it okay?

Vidina: Of course, Dad

Yuna:(stands by the girls)Uh...have you seen an airship around? It should be here

Chelsey:(shakes her head)Nope. Sorry Mom

Simone: What happened to Seymour? And Mckelly?

Tidus: We fought off the lizard guards but after we fought them, Seymour and his henchmen disappeared

Yuna:(sighs with relief)At least they're out of our problems now. Now we can go home

Simone: You mean, Seymour took off?

Tidus: Uh...yeah Simone. What else could I have meant?

Simone: We have to stop him! He'll destroy Spira if we don't!

Seymour: You're right. I will

(everyone gasps and turns to see Seymour, Jake, Mckelly, Gawk, the Wattson brothers, and the guards)

Mckelly: You still haven't won yet!

Jake: You still have a long way to go!

Simone:(clenches her fist)We're gonna stop you! you'll see!

Mckelly: Let's see you then

Simone: Don't worry, we will

Yuna: You just don't give up do you?

Seymour: Giving up isn't in my vocabulary Yuna. I see it isn't in yours either.(walks towards Yuna)I have had visions Yuna, you and I will rule Spira. We will turn the world of the living into a living hell, everyone will feel Eternal pain, and you will become immortal. You'll become powerful, think about it, you'll possess powers you never had. You'll be my queen(reaches out his hand)Join me Yuna, Join me!

Yuna: No! I'll never join you! Power means nothing to me!

Seymour: You'd rather be weak? Spend the rest of your life with your pathetic family?

Yuna: Yes, I would

Seymour: What a pity. Then you will suffer the most pain. But for now, men!

Yuna: No! Don't please!(Seymour grabs her arm and holds her against him tightly)

(A group of Guado grab Simone, Nina and Chelsey and take them to Seymour)

Tidus: Nooooo!(runs towards Seymour but the guards hold him back)

Nina: Ow! let me go! you're messing up my hair!

(The girls try to brake free)

Seymour: Join me! or else I'll kill them now!

Yuna:(looks up at Seymour and tries to wiggle free out of his arms)Fine, I'll join you!

Chelsey: What? no Mom!

Yuna:(smiles)I'll be your queen(strokes Seymour's cheek and he smiles at her)

Seymour: You have chosen well Yuna

Tidus: Yuna! What are you doing?

Yuna:(looks at Tidus and winks then looks back at Seymour)Oh, Seymour...I missed you

Tidus:(nodds and smiles)Go, Yuna

Rikku:(whispers)I don't get it, why did she wink?

Tidus:(whispers back)She's pretending! she's trying to make him trust her so behind his back she can take back the girls

Paine: smart move

Seymour: Well, something doesn't seem right.(looks at Yuna who is smiling)I don't know if I can trust you

Simone: Alright guys, let's fight!

Chelsey:(sighs and shakes her head)Oh boy...there she goes again...

Simone:(kicks one of the Guado and punches another)Come on guys!(runs off)

Chelsey:(pulls free and kicks a Guado)Simone!(runs after Simone)

Nina: Hey! wait up!(punches a Guado and runs after her sisters)

Seymour: Those little brats! They keep getting away! After them!

Mckelly: You heard my father! after them you fools!

(The guado and the lizards chase after the girls)

Jake: I'll go to, I'll bring them back too

Yuna: Oh no! Girls!

Seymour:(pulls Yuna close to him)Kiss me, Yuna

Yuna: Never!(slaps Seymour and runs off)Come on! we have to save them!

Tidus: right! let's go guys!

(Simone, Nina and Chelsey run as fast as they can and then you see a group of Guado and lizard brutes after them)

Simone: sheesh leave us alone!

(After some battles and you reach a save point and walk a little past it)

Nina:(breathing heavily)Man, we probably could join the cross country club someday. We do just just as much as them and...Oh snap! my shoes are dirty!

Chelsey: Nina how could you be so worried about your shoes? we're running away from our deaths here!

Simone: I've had enough of this, I'm going to fight and no one's gonna stop me!

(Then Jake appears with his blade and looks at Simone)

Jake: So, it has come to this. I'm not letting you three get away, my leader needs your souls and your souls he will have

Simone: Shut-up Jake! You're just a dumbass puppet being controlled by Seymour

Jake: I'm no puppet, you three are though

Nina: We are? I don't see any strings attached to me

Jake: You must not get what I'm saying then...(then she swings his blade and some kind of darkness swirls around him)You should join the darkside, it's way better and more powerful. But it's too late to choose now, You are going to Seymour conscious or unconscious

Chelsey: Please Jake, don't let the darkness take over you! Stop this!

Simone: It's no use Chels, we're gonna have to fight him. let's get him!

Chelsey:(sighs and shakes her head)Why do I get into these things?

(the girls run towards Jake)

AFTER BATTLE

(The girls are panting and so is Jake and he glares then runs off. Then the girls stand up and the ground starts shaking)

Nina: W-What is going oooooonnnnn?

Simone: I don't know. Let's head back now!

(Then the ground stops shaking and Simone and the girls feel dizzy)

Chelsey: What is wrong with me? Why do I feel dizzy?

Nina: It's like I just got off a roller coaster(then some creepy black vine crawls up her leg from the ground)AAAAHHHHHHHHH! WHAT THE HELL IS THAT!!!

Chelsey: Nina! hang on I'll cut it!(slashes at it with her daggers but it's no use then a black vine crawls up her leg)Get off me!

Simone: Oh no!(then a black vine slithers up her leg)No! not me too!

(The girls try to brake free of the black vines as they silther up their bodies and tie up their legs then their arms)

Simone: HELLLLLPPPPP!

Vidina: SIMONE!

Simone: VIDINA! HELP US!

(Vidina and his friends show up and Vidina tries to rip off the vines but they're too tight on her)

Melanie: Oh my god! what are those???

Nina: I don't know but GET THEM OFF ME!

Vidina: Don't worry, I'll save you guys!

Sam: Oh no...Vidina there's nothing we can do, they've been called down to the Underworld!

Osric: What do you mean called down:?

Sam: I mean that those vines are going to take them to the Underworld!

Nina:(crying)No! I don't want to go there! Why does this have to happen to us???

(Then all of a sudden a hole opens up and the girls fall back screaming)

Vidina: SIMONE!(reaches out his hand down the hole)

Simone: VIDINA!!!

(Then the girls keep screaming as they fall down and you can't see them anymore)

Yava: Oh no...

Melanie: It's too late. we lost them

(Yuna and the others walk over)

Tidus: Where's the girls?

Vidina:(looking sad)I'm sorry, they fell down this hole. We couldn't save them on time

Yuna:(yells down the hole)GIRLS!!!!(her voice echoes down the hole and her eyes fill with tears)It's just like my dreams...No, No!(Yuna gets ready to jump into the hole but Lulu holds her back)

Lulu: You can't Yuna, it might be too late

(Yuna nods then walks off crying then everyone walks off)

(Now meanwhile down the hole, you see Simone falling slowly down the hole in darkness then you see

Nina and Chelsey falling too)

Luckily we didn't die, we were headed for the world below. "Why were we called to the Underworld?" I thought to myself. I wanted answers, and we were about to discover some strange answers that would change us forever...

(Simone opens her eyes and looks around at the Eternal darkness. She looks around for her sisters then she and her sisters fall down fast. Now you see Simone falling from clouds and heading down straight for land and she screams then all you see is light)

Simone:(wakes up slowly to see herself on a beach)Huh? Why am I on a beach?(Then she looks around and notices she is on Besaid Island)Besaid Island? I'm home? But wasn't I falling...down a hole?(looks up at the sky and it is a little unusual then she looks and notices her friends Yuffie, Selphie, Garnet, and Rinoa)Hey! guys!

(When you run over to Simone's friends)

Simone: Hey guys, can you tell me what's going on?

(Simone's friends just stand there)

Simone: Uh hello? it's me Simone? Kool Katt? stop ignoring me!(Then she puts her hand out and it goes right through Selphie)Ah! what's going on?

????: Can't you see yet, this isn't really your home. It's a dream of it

Simone: A dream of it? so this is a dream?

????: No, your home is the dream...Haven't you noticed that?

Simone: Uh...no. I know my Dad is a dream of the fayth but I'm pretty sure I'm real right?

????: In some ways yes, but you and your sisters aren't like other humans...you three have powers so powerful you don't even know it

Simone: What is going on? and how is my home a dream? Hellllooooo! Answer Dammit!

????: You'll find out soon enough, Simone

(Now Simone finds herself falling back slowly and she falls into the sand and falls down into more darkness and her eyes close as she falls down and down)

I had no idea what the voice meant, My home a dream? I didn't know what to think...I really wanted the answers as soon as possible

(Now you see the Farplane abyss and the girls are laying down in a little field of grass *The field Yuna was laying on in FFX-2*)

Simone:(wakes up slowly and looks around at all of the pyreflies)Huh? What just happened? I'm so confused...how is my home a dream? oh...maybe I had a dream about that, maybe it isn't true. Where am I anyways?(looks to see waterfalls then stands up and looks up at the sky)We've fallen a long way.(looks at Nina and Chelsey and walks over to them and tries to wake them up)Guys! wake up! wake up!

Chelsey:(wakes up)What? huh?(sits up)Where are we?

Simone: It seems like the Farplane. Is this the Underworld?

Nina:(wakes up)Oh snap, are we alive?

Chelsey: Yes we are Nina

Nina: Whoa! where are we? where's the others?

Simone:(points to the sky)Up there

Chelsey:(looks at the waterfalls)This place is very pretty but pretty creepy at the same time

Fayth: Ah, Simone, Nina and Chelsey. I've been expecting you three

(Simone turns around and sees the fayth)

Simone: You..why do I feel like I know you...?

Fayth:(laughs)I'm a fayth remember? The fayth cannot live in the living world anymore so we stay down here

Nina: Look pal, I want to go home! Is there a way back up?

Fayth: Unfortunatelly there isn't...

Nina: You meam we're stuck down here forever? I didn't even get a chance to become a fashion designer!

Chelsey: I'll never see Mom or Dad again...

Fayth: There is a reason you three fell down here

Simone: Why? what's the reason?

Fayth: Those holes...in the Upper world, you saw them didn't you? The shadow lords have gathered energy from the Shadow palo for at least one million years. They have been summoned to bring chaos to Spira and search for the evil one. The one who is to bring the mighty god of darkness!

Chelsey: That still doesn't answer our question. Why were we brought down here?

Fayth: Don't you see? You three are meant to save Spira, you aren't like any other teenager. You three have more powers than you know, and they are very powerful but you never knew about them because they are deep inside each of you. And as I recall only one of you has the powers of darkness, but I'm still not really sure if you three are the chosen ones...

Simone: What are you talking about?

Fayth: I have had a glimpse of the future. You have become famous and saved the world from oblivion. But then I had a glimpse of the future if darkness prevailed...I'll show it to you(closes his eyes then the girls close their eyes and see the future. Everything is dead and the sky is black)

Nina: Whoa! it's so creepy! where is everyone?

Fayth: Dead. Spira was destroyed by the shadows and the god and all living things have been destroyed. Except for them

Simone: Who?

(Now you see Seymour sitting on a throne with Yuna beside him and Mckelly is standing by them)

Fayth: Seymour is the future ruler of darkness, the king I should say...and your mother will be his queen

Simone: So in the future, my mom becomes evil?

Fayth: Not exactly. Seymour told your mother that if she joined him he'd spare your lives and not steal your souls. But he somehow brainwashed her...then he stole your lives and became immortal

Chelsey: Immortal? isn't he dead? an unsent?

(Now everyone opens their eyes)

Fayth: No he isn't dead or alive. I'm not really sure what he is but we must stop him as soon as possible. So, the reason for you three is to destroy Seymour and the Shadow palo. If you don't, Spira is done for

Simone: But we don't know where the Shadow palo is! How can we destroy it if we can't find it?

Fayth: You do know you have to destroy all six shadow lords to find out, right? So, you have destroyed five of them, the last one lies in the Underworld. Balora, she is not strong enough against light yet but she is the toughest of the shadow lords. She's still gathering energy to rise so go now before to destroy her. Okay?

Nina: Yes sir!

Fayth: And remember, you three are the mightiest of all, don't you ever wonder why only you three can defeat the Shadow lords and no one else? And how can you use powerful attacks during battle?

Simone: Uh yeah but...So, what are we? why aren't we like anyone else?

Fayth: I don't have much time to explain but you three are the Angels of Eternal light, only you three can stop the darkness and destroy Seymour for good. Hurry now, good luck Angels...

Nina: A-Angels?

Simone: Come on let's go!

Fayth: You'll find out more on your journey, good luck!

(A black hole opens up down in the depths and the girls jump down. Now you see the girls falling slowly

into the Underworld and they land on a platform)

Nina:(shakes)Uh guys...this place is creepy

Chelsey:(looks around)It's so dark. I can't see a thing...

Simone: We to find the last shadow lord...then we'll go home

(Now a bunch of glyphs shine around the girls and a bunch of eyes appear around them)

Chelsey: I want to go home!

Simone: Dont' worry, we will. And find out more about us being angels. Come on!(runs off then the girls follow)

(When you go to another platform)

Suka: Look Denya, it's those three twerps who destroyed our plan!

Denya: Oh great, but they can't do nothing now, they're in our world now! hahahahahahahahaha

Simone: Get out of our way you stupid demons!

Suka: Why should we? we're not just gonna let you through just because you three are the Angels of Eternal light. It's probably a joke anyways

Denya: Of course it is Suka, those three brats...the power all mighty Angels of Eternal light? HA! I expected the Angels to look better than that!

Chelsey: We're no brats! and besides, we don't know much about this yet. But soon we will, after we finish you off

Denya: Finish us off? please you wish! let's get em Suka!

Suka: right behind ya sis!

(light shines around Suka and Denya and they combine together)

Denya: Try to fight us now you wretched humans!

AFTER BATTLE

Chelsey: wretched Humans...sure. They messed with the wrong girls!

Simone: Hmmmm, could we really be the Angels of Eternal light? I wonder what we can do

Nina: I dunno but the longer we chat the easier those shadows could kill us!

Simone: Oh right let's get outta here!

(At the end of the path in a dark chamber)

Nina: Well, where is it? I want to go home now! This place is very scary!

Simone: Hey, what's that red light over there?

(A red light is shining in the darkness)

Chelsey: Beats me. It's like an infrared light...but why down here?

(Then it appears to be two eyes and a huge demon walks towards the girls holding a huge spiked club)

Chelsey: It's not a red light! It's the last Shadow lord!

Simone: Alright girls, we fight for our return home!

Nina: You're so totally right!

AFTER BATTLE

(Balora falls down and a bunch of pyreflies out of her, then Chelsey hears a voice)

????: Well done

Chelsey: Who said that?

Nina: said what?

Chelsey: Didn't you hear it? I heard a spooky voice and it said: "Well done"

Simone: Sorry Chels, but we didn't hear anything

????: You have unlocked the seal of the Shadow palo. Now it is able to be lifted from it's recess

Chelsey: See? didn't you hear that?

(Simone and Nina shake their heads)

Chelsey: Argh. Maybe only I can understand it, because only I was able to understand Denya...maybe I

can talk to Shadows too! Because I'm a fiend speaker! No wonder you guys can't hear it!

Simone: Well, ask that thing where is it or what is it?

Chelsey: Show yourself!

(Then a spirit of a young woman appears)

????: I am the spirit of Balora. I was transformed into that monster and stuck in the darkness for so long. I was human one million years ago but the evil god made me transform into a shadow lord

Chelsey: So you're not really evil? you're just a human spirit?

????: Kind of but I'm still a shadow. My real name is Kirana, I was one of Serena's friends, I was a sister to her. The other Shadow lords are my friends as well, their human spirits are resting in the Farplane now. And I am to go there as well

Chelsey: Why are you talking to me?

Kirana: Because you are a fiend speaker, are you not? all the shadow lords know about you, infact Denya and Suka told us that. And the truth that no one knows about is that me and that me and the other shadow lords aren't evil at all. In fact we're good

Chelsey: That's impossible! you're shadows, you're full of pure evil aren't you?

Kirana: That's what you were told. We were supposed to bring chaos to the Upper world, but we disobeyed our orders. We were trying to help you by warning you

Chelsey:(shakes her head)That can't be right! you tried to kill us!

Kirana: No we weren't. All six of us tried to warn you but you weren't listening close enough, so we fought you so you would kill us. And so you could unlock the Shadow palo seal and destroy it. Plus, we sensed Serena's presence near you. So we went to you and helped you in a way

Chelsey: So, nothing is pure evil then. What comes from the heart is pure, the Shadows aren't all evil, maybe they can be nice gentle creatures

Kirana: You have learned much young one. Unfortunetly I can't stay any longer. I must go to the Farplane and rest while I can before the darkness swallows it up. All six of us are counting on you...save your world and destroy the Shadow palo before the evil one get's his hands on it!(starts to dissolve into pyreflies)

Chelsey: Wait! where is the Shadow palo?

Kirana: It is on Glitterenta island. You'll have to find it since no ones knows about it. Remember, you three are the mightiest of all, you're the Angels of Eternal light the keys to unlocking the gateway to eternal light. Farewell, young one(dissolves as pyreflies and goes towards the Farplane and a portal appears in her spot)

Simone: Well, what just happened?

Chelsey: I'll explaine later, we don't have much time. We have to go through this portal. If it's the way back up

Nina: You first, Chels

Simone: Yeah, you first

Chelsey: Oh fine(takes a deep breath in and out and walks into the portal)

Nina:(shaking)Okay, like you next Simone

Simone: Whatever(pushes Nina into the portal then looks for a minute and goes in. After, the portal dissolves)

(Now you see the girls being sucked up to the surface then you see a bright light)

(Now Simone opens her eyes and the girls find themselves on the Fiona plains)

Simone: We made it! we're home! well, not exactly at home in Besaid but what the hell

Nina:(jumps up and down)I can't believe we're alive! ALIVE!(hugs Chelsey)

Chelsey: Hehehehe...hoaray...

Simone: Where's the others?

Nina: maybe they took off thinking we were dead...oh snap!

Chelsey: Well let's find them, and tell them we're the Angels of Eternal light!

Simone:(thinking)*And find out what the fayth meant about Besaid being a dream...*

(After you find the others walking ahead)

Simone: Heeeeeeyyyy! Did you miss us?

(Everyone turns around, the girls's friends are excited and wave then Yuna turns around and smiles)

Yuna: Girls!(runs over to the girls)

Tidus: Girls? You guys are alive!

(Yuna hugs the girls tightly while crying and cuddles against them)

Nina: Ah...home

Yuna: Are you three okay? I was soooooo worried! I thought I lost all of you!(kisses each of the girls on their cheeks)

Simone: Well, you didn't lose us yet!

Tidus: So...what happened?

(Yuna lets go of the girls and everyone gathers around to listen)

Chelsey: Well, it's a long story to tell you the truth...

Nina: Well, we were very scared, and it was like pure dark down there and like we couldn't see a thing...and there were like monsters...yeah

Simone: Nice, Nina

Lulu: It's a miracle you returned. The Underworld seems like a place of no return

Kimahri: Yuna's daughters strong, Kimahri see Yuna worry, but Kimahri knew daughters would return

Nina: Well we are the Angels of Eternal light after all! That's what we found out!

Yuna: Angels of Eternal light?

Tidus: Huh? What are we talking about?

Sam: The keys to the gateway of eternal light, the only ones who can truly destroy the darkness and the Shadow lords. I knew you three were the angels, you fought those shadow lords like they were nothing!

Chelsey: Speaking of Shadow lords, we fought the last one!

Vidina: Alright! now we can find the Shadow palo! But...how are you guys Angels?

Sam: That's all I know, I never really knew much about them in the first place

Tidus: You sure know alot Sam. No wonder you and Chelsey are friends

Nina: Oh snap! what about Seymour?

Tidus: He and his henchmen took off on a huge airship, they were gonna search for you girls

Paine: And Cid isn't here yet...

Rikku: Oh what is taking him?

(Then everyone hears the Celsius coming down and everyone looks up)

Cid:(on spekaer)Sorry I'm late! There was something wrong with the engine so we had to fix it...anyways did you get them?

Yuna:(giggles)Yes we did Uncle Cid!

Cid: Good then(presses a button and opens latch)Climb aboard!

Yuna: Come on, let's go home

(everyone runs on and the girls are giggling)

(On the Celsius when you go to bridge)

Rikku: Vydran! fro teth'd oui vea dra ahkeha pavuna fa mavd?(Father! why didn't you fix the engine before we left?)

Cid: Ur, cdub ouin lusbyehhk!(Oh, stop your complaining!)

Rikku: Cunno(sorry)

Cid: So, on to Besaid right?

Tidus:(nodds)Yeah!

Brother: It'll take almost a day to get there, in the meantime we should keep an eye out for Seymour's airship, they could attack us! But good thing we have missles!

(After you go to the cabin to rest And go back)

I waited too long, I had to finally say it

Simone: We can't go home!

Wakka: Why noy? you of all people should want to go home after what you've been through, ya?

Simone: But we need to stop Seymour and his henchmen! He's gonna destroy Spira if we don't do something!

Yuna:(steps forward)Simone, we're going home! There is no way I'm putting you and your sisters in harm's way!

Simone: But, Mom!

Tidus: Simone, listen to your mother! she's trying to protect you!

Yuna: I will not put you in any danger! Not again!(starts to have tears)I almost lost you once and I won't lose you again! do you understand, honey?

Simone: When will you treat me like I'm older! I'm not a little girl anymore! I want to save Spira! heck, not even Nina and Chelsey are little anymore! We're the Angels of Eternal light! we have to save Spira!

Yuna: I don't care what you are! You are all my daughters and I'm not going to let you go and get yourselves killed! That's it!

Nina:(whispers)Hey, Chels. Should we step in?

Chelsey:(whispers)Nah,it won't work

Simone: Just, let us grow up

I kinda felt rude talking that way to Mom. I knew she wanted to protect us but I wanted her to understand that we were older...and not little anymore. And that we were the only hope for Spira...

(When you walk around the whole ship and talk to your friends then go back to the bridge)

Rikku: Simone, Nina, Chelsey...tu oui fyhhy dno du tneja dra yencreb?(Simone, Nina, Chelsey...do you wanna try to drive the airship?)

Simone: yna oui gettehk Yihd Rikku?(Are you kidding Aunt Rikku?)

Rikku: No I'm not

Tidus: Wow, you guys can speak Al Bhed?

Simone:(nodds)Yep, Aunt Rikku taught us

Tidus: Cool, my daughters speak Al Bhed!

Yuna: I've always wanted to learn Al Bhed, maybe you girls can teach me!

Wakka: Well, I've been studying a little bit so I can kinda understand it

Lulu: Sure you can Wakka

Nina: Then try to translate this!

Simone: Wakka's cdusylrec cu pek!(Wakka's stomach is so big!)

Nina: Oayr, ed'c mega ra'c bnakhyhd!(Yea it's like he's pregnant!)

Chelsey: fa lyh ehcimd Wakka ymm dra desa yht ra lth'd ihtancdyht ic!(We can insult Wakka all the time and he can't understand us!)

(The girls start laughing and Rikku laughs too)

Wakka: What? what did they say?

Rikku: Something about you looking pregnant!

(Everyone laughs and Wakka get's mad and crosses his arms)

Wakka: Hey! oh you are all in trouble when we get home, ya?

Simone: Oh, I'm sooo scared!

(The girls start laughing again)

Brother: Hey, we picked up something on the radar! Like a colony of birds...big birds!

Rikku: Show us on the screen Brother!

(The screen shows a colony of Whistlers flying in the sky by the Celsius)

Chelsey: The Whistlers!

Wakka: Wha-What? What did you say, Chelsey?

Vidina: It's the Whistlers from one of the movie spheres! But, what are they doing here?

Sam: How can it be? they became extinct a million years ago...unless...

Nina: Let's go see what they look like up close!

Melanie: Yeah! they look so cool!

Yuna: I don't know, what if they bite?

Simone: Everything bites to you, Mom

Osric: Can we please go see them?

Chelsey: Yeah, can we Mom?

Yuna: Well...(sighs)Okay. But be careful...

Simone: Let's go!

(The girls and their friends go into the elevator)

(After you walk halfway on the Celsius deck)

Nina: Huh?(looks around then looks up)Wow!

(a colony of Whistlers are flying above the ship and are making dolphin-like noises)

Osric: The Whistlers...they're beautiful!

Yava: I wonder why they're still alive...and nobody's ever seen them

Sam: Whistlers were supposed to be extinct one million years ago, Humans kept hunting them down and killing them for their crystal scales and sell them for tons of gil

Melanie: That's so mean! They killed poor innocent creatures just for money!

Sam: But, I guess this colony managed to survive...but how?

(Three Whistlers fly down onto the deck)

Vidina: Look out! here comes three of them!

(One of the Whistlers makes a dolphin-like sound and walks over to Chelsey)

????: Hello there, my name is Byrn, my two brothers are Dasher and Skywalker. We never thought we'd ever find another fiend speaker

Chelsey:(gasps)Whistlers can talk too?

Nina: Like what do you mean? I didn't hear anything!

Chelsey: Wow, I can talk to Whistlers too!

Simone: Well, what are they saying?

Byrn: We can sense fiend speakers, they are the only humans we can trust since they have a gift to talking to certain creatures.

Dasher: Not only that, we came to help the Angels of Eternal light. We sense that something bad is going to happen!

Chelsey: What's going to happen?

Skywalker: You'll see soon enough

Chelsey:(turns to her friends)Ahem. Well, their names are Byrn, Dasher and Skywalker. And they're here to help the Angels of Eternal light which is Simone, Nina and I

Vidina: Help you guys? for what?

Chelsey:(shrugs)I dunno

(Nina goes on Dasher's back)

Nina: Yeehaw! look at me! I'm riding a Whistler! yahoo!

Chelsey: hehe...sorry, my sister's crazy!

Simone:(goes on Skywalker's back)Sweet! A Whistler's back feels much safer than a chocobo's back!

Chelsey: Well, I might as well try(goes on Byrn's back)Hey, this feels cool

Yava: Uh...You should be careful guys...

Nina: What do you mean?

(Then Skywalker, Dasher and Byrn start to take off)

Nina: AAAAAAAHHHHHHH!

Simone: Whoa!

Chelsey: Hey! what's going oooooonnnnnnnnn!

(The three Whistlers fly into the sky and the girls's friends on the ship are waving to them)

Simone: Wow! This is actually pretty cool!(opens her arms and feels the wind in her face)YOHOOOOOO!

Nina: I want off! I'm going to die!

Chelsey: Relax Nina, this is fun!

Simone: Hey guys, try this!(stands up on Skywalker's back)Now this is awesome!

Chelsey:(stands up on Byrn's back giggling)Come on Nina! You gotta try this!

Nina: No, I can't! There is no way I'm doing that!

Simone: Just do it!

Nina: Fine!(stands up carefully then smiles)Hey, this is cool! Yahooo!

(the girls start shouting with excitement laughing then the Whistlers fly through clouds then through a rainbow)

To tell you the truth, I wanted to go again. I felt so free, that all my problems just swept way...and then

(After the Whistlers land back on the deck, and the girls get off)

Chelsey: That was sooooo much fun!

(Then the door opens and Yuna and Tidus come out)

Yuna: Are you okay? Girls?

Nina: of course we're okay, Mom

(Yuna walks over and hugs all of the girls)

Chelsey: Mom, we can'y breathe here

Yuna: What were you thinking? Your father and I were so worried about you girls! What do you have to say to this, Tidus?

Tidus: How did you do that? Was it cool?(Yuna steps on his foot)Ow! er...I mean...how could you do something that would give your Mom a heart attack?

Yuna: You could have fallen off those singers!

Chelsey: Whistlers...Mom

Yuna: Do not correct me, young lady! I told you to took at them, not ride them and be killed!

Nina: But...we wanted to have fun!

Yuna: You can have fun when we're home!

Simone: How can we ever have fun when all you do is worry! You're so over-protective of us!

Yuna: I'm over-protective of you because I want to keep you safe! I love all of you, and would not want to lose any of you!

Simone: Well, can't you give us a chance? You know? we're teenagers now, not toddlers! And we want to have fun!

Yuna: Honey, you're allowed to have fun, but not the kind that'll get you killed!

Simone: Well, we can never have fun 'cause you always ruin it!

Yuna: That's not true!

Simone: Yes it is! Leave us alone! and let me grow up!(stomps off to the elevator)

Yuna: Do I really ruin fun?

(Nina and Chelsey scratch their heads then run into the ship and Yuna hugs Tidus and starts to cry)

(In the Celsius when you go to the bridge)

Tidus:(walks in)Hey, guys. How much longer?

Rikku: Where's Yunie?

Tidus: She wanted to be alone

Rikku: Oh, is she upset?

Tidus: Uh...you can say that

Paine: About what?

Chelsey: Simone yelled at her

Nina: Yeah, and like totally being rude! go apologize to her!

Chelsey: Mom doesn't deserve to be treated that way!

Simone: Oh fine I'll apologize! But you owe me!(walks off)

(When you go to the deck)

I kinda was going to apologize to Mom anyways, I felt like a snob, so I did

(Simone starts walking towards Yuna who is standing at the end of the deck then starts to turn around)

Yuna: Simone! I need to talk to you

(When you go over to Yuna)

Simone: What is it now?

Yuna:(sighs)You and I have had a very bitter relationship. We're constantly arguing and we don't really laugh about things together, you know? I want to get along with you(Simone nods)Just because you get into trouble a lot doesn't mean I don't love you. I love you so much Simone, I don't mean to ground you, yell at you and be very protective. You're my daughter and I'm your mother, and in order to teach you and keep you safe, I have to do these things.(A tear goes down her cheek)I always feel that you and I will never get along...I want to though...

Simone: I'm sorry, I mean it. I didn't mean to be rude, I just want to be treated my age

Yuna: I know. But be glad that you have me, my parents died when I was very young. I never knew what it's like to argue with my mother or feel the way you do. And you never know when I'll leave this world...

Simone: I know, I'll try and do better. No, I will do better, I promise Mom

Yuna: Are you sure

Simone: Yeah, cross my heart

Yuna: I love you Simone

Simone: I love you too Mom

Yuna: Can we please learn to get along? It's not too late

Simone: Okay(stays silent for a moment)Uh...Mom?

Yuna: Yes?

Simone: What do you think of Vidina?

Yuna: Vidina? um...a fine young man(looks at Simone)Why do you ask?

Simone: I dunno. Vidina's been acting weird around me lately...

Yuna: Really?

Simone: Yeah

(Tidus walks out on the deck)

Tidus: Hey, what are you guys talking about?

Yuna: Oh, just girl talk(puts a hand on Simone's shoulder)

Tidus: Okay, Then I guess I should leave you two alone then(walks back into the ship)

Simone: Hey, Mom?

Yuna: Hmm?

Simone: Uh...I...uh...(Then the ship starts to shake)Whoa! what's going on?

Cid:(on speaker)Everyone! we're being attacked by something huge!

(The Whistlers start to squeal)

Yuna:(panicks)Follow mw Simone!

(Then the Celsius starts shaking violently again and Yuna starts slipping towards the edge)

Simone: Mom!(Yuna almost falls off the edge but Simone grabs her hand)Don't worry Mom! I won't let you go!

(In the celsius)

Wakka: Who would wanna attack us, ya?

Nina: Make it stop! I don't wanna die now!

Chelsey: Maybe it's an aerial fiend! a big one!

Tidus: Wait, aren't Yuna and Simone on the deck?

Lulu: Yes, they are!

Kimahri: Yuna!

Tidus:(runs to the elevator)Yuna, Simone! I'm coming!

(Nina and Chelsey run after)

Chelsey: Hey! wait up Dad!

Sam: What about the Whistlers?

Osric: Oh right! They might get killed!

(Now on the deck)

Yuna:(her hand starts to slip)Honey, you're gonna have to let me go!

Simone:(shakes her head)No! I won't let you die!

(Tidus and the girls run out of the elevator)

Nina: Simone! Mom!

Chelsey: Don't worry! we're here to help!

(Nina and Chelsey grab Simone and pull)

Nina: Man, you guys are heavy!

(Then Tidus helps pull and Yuna gets back up)

Yuna: Thank you guys. Who's attacking us?

(Then everyone turns around and the huge Mccloud airship is beside the Celsius getting ready to fire)

Chelsey: The Mcclouds!

(The Whistlers start squealing louder)

Simone: Oh, look what the cat's brought in

Mckelly:(on a speaker)I see you three brats survived, but too bad we're gonna destroy your ship then my father will take your lives!

Seymour: Give up now Lady Yuna, face it, you lost! Your daughters will be mine!

Tidus: Give it a rest Seymour!

(The Whistlers start to shoot blasts at the Mccloud airship)

Chelsey: The Whistlers are helping us!

Seymour: Those pitiful creatures are on your side too? Then they'll die as well!

(A latch opens on the Mccloud airship and a huge machina bird flies over)

Yuna: Girls! get inside! Your father and I will fight that machina bird!

Simone: No! we'll fight that machina bird! You and Dad should go inside and tell Cid to activate the main guns!

Tidus: Yeah, they'll hold it off! Let's go Yuna!

Yuna: Are you sure you'll be alright, girls?

Nina: Positive! we are the Angels of Eternal light after all!

Yuna:(nods)Okay, we're counting on you!

(Tidus and Yuna run inside then the girls run towards the machina bird)

Simone: You're going down tin can!

AFTER BATTLE

Seymour: How did they do that?

Mckelly: Trust me, they can do things Father. weird things.

Gawk: Very weird things yep yep

Jake: Hmmm, sometimes I wonder if they are even ordinary...

Seymour: Well, they haven't won for long! wait till they see this!

(On the Mccloud airship, all the cannons fire at once at the Celsius. Inside the Celsius everyone runs out to deck then the Celsius starts spinning up into the sky then down near the water and everyone is hanging on tight)

Simone: HANG ONNNNN!

(Then the Celsius starts to blow up and everyone falls off it and Simone looks down below and her eyes close as she falls and sees a ray of light)

CHAPTER FIVE IS COMPLETE!

7 - chapter six

It was luck I tell ya. Seymour and the others may have won that time, but there was good luck too. I remember after the Celsius exploded, everyone fell off and then the Whistlers each caught us and brought us towards land. I thought it was a dream, but when I woke up on land, I knew it wasn't...

(Simone is lying on a shore of a beach and wakes up then wipes sand off her clothes)

Simone: Whoa! we survived that? wait, where is everyone? hello? I should go look. And find out where I am

(When you walk to one side of the beach, you see Nina lying on the sand)

Simone: Hey, Nina! Wake up! We're on land! Nina? Nina!

Nina:(wakes up slowly)What? we're on land?

Simone: see for yourself

Nina: Wow, we actually made it!

Simone: Yeah. It's a miracle! But I'm not sure where the others are

Nina:(shakes her head)Me neither

Chelsey:(running over)Heyyyy guys!

Simone+Nina: Chelsey!

Chelsey: I can't believe what just happened! After the Celsius blew up, everyone fell out from it but then the Whistlers caught each of us and brought us here! They saved us!

Simone: So, it wasn't a dream. Now, we just have to find everyone

Nina: But if we do, how will we get out of here?

Simone: Oh...right. We could ride the Whistlers but they probably couldn't hold us for that long

Chelsey: Well, there's a forest over there. Everyone's probably in there

Simone:(nods)Yeah, and be prepared because there's probably lots of fiends here!

Nina: ookie dookie!

(When you reach a certain point int the forest and when you see Yuna lying flat on the ground)

Nina: Mom!

(The girls run to Yuna and all gather around her)

Chelsey: Is she dead?

Simone:(leans her head against Yuna's chest)She's breathing fine

Nina: She's probably in a state of shock. Wait...then she wouldn't be breathing

Chelsey: Maybe she's not breathing enough, quick! Someone give her CPR!

Nina: No way I'm doing it!

Simone: Well I'm not! I've imagined myself going mouth to mouth with the man of my dreams! Not her!

(Then Yuna starts to move)

Simone: Mom?

(Yuna opens her eyes slowly and looks around)

Yuna: Um...what just happened? where are we?

Nina: I don't know. But all I know that the Whistlers brought us here

Yuna:(tries to stand up then the girls help her up)Thank you girls. Well, I'm glad you three are okay. But, where's everyone else?

Chelsey: Somewhere in these woods. But I know they're fine

Yuna:(nods)Let's go.(As she starts walking she feels pain)Ow! My leg!

Simone: Are you okay Mom?

Yuna:(stands back up)I'll be fine.(starts walking again then huets again)Ow! I must've twisted my leg!

Nina: Here, we'll help you Mom!

(The girls all help Yuna walk)

Yuna: Thank you. My leg really hurts

Simone: Don't worry, I'm sure it'll get better

(After you reach a certain point in the woods)

DURING BATTLE

Chelsey: This one looks pretty tough guys!

Simone: Please. Lemme at it!

(After you use Attack on it then the fiend hits back and it takes a lot of damage)

Simone: Man, that thing is tough!

Yuna: You sure you don't need a hand?

Chelsey: But...your leg!

Yuna: A twisted leg isn't going to keep me from a fight! Let me deal with this one!

(After the girls run off, you fight with Yuna)

AFTER BATTLE

(While everyone is walking)

Chelsey: Whoa! That was cool!

Nina: Can you show me how to do that!

Yuna: You're talking to the legendary high summoner! That was nothing! I want a challenge!

Simone: Uh-oh, Mom's becoming cool!

Nina: That can't be good...

Chelsey:(looks up)Hey, someone's tangled in that tree up there!

(everyone looks up and Tidus is in the tree)

Tidus: Uh...guys, help me!

Yuna: Tidus! Don't worry we'll get you outta there! OWWWWW!

Simone: You can't, your leg!

Tidus: Hurry up! it's not exactly comfy up here!

Chelsey: Hold on Dad!(climbs up the tree quickly and slashes at the branches with one of her daggers and Tidus falls out then she jumps down too)

Yuna: Are you okay? Honey?

Tidus:(gets up)Yeah, I'm fine. Thanks Chels

Chelsey: No problem Dad

Tidus: Are you hurt?

Yuna: I managed to twist my leg

Tidus: Here, I'll help then(carries Yuna)The others must be nearby. Let's go and stay close

Simone: Of course Dad

Nina: Yay! We're together again!(jumps up and down while everyone laughs)

(After you're near the save point in the woods)

Simone: So...any ideas as to where we are?

Nina: Beats me. All I know it's no where near home

Tidus:(places Yuna under a tree)We should take a break, who knows how big these woods are. And everyone could be on the other side. If they're still alive

Yuna:(lifts her dress a little and to check her leg and it starts hurting when she moves it)Ow! maybe if we rest here for a bit everyone will find us. My leg is really hurting and I don't think I can go on further

Chelsey: Should we get some wood? it'll be nighttime soon

Tidus: Let's just sit around and wait, when your mother feels better then we'll go look for everyone

Simone: Sounds like a good plan, I guess

Nina:(looks around and notices movement in trees)Hey uh...guys...I just saw something

Yuna: Where, Nina?

Nina: Over there!(points ahead)

Tidus:(gets out his sword)I'll go see what it is. You guys stay here with your mother.(runs off)

(When you walk over to Nina and Chelsey)

Tidus: Hey! you guys! bring your mother here!

(When you run towards Tidus)

Wakka: Hey guys! You're alright!

(Tidus and Wakka high five)

Lulu:(walks over to Yuna)Are you okay?

Yuna: I'm fine. I twisted my leg though...

Vidina: Are you okay, guys?

Nina: Yeppers!

Simone: Never better, Dine!

Wakka: We're not sure where everyone else is, but I'm sure they're close, ya?

Tidus: They're not with you?

Lulu: We all got separated after those Whistlers brought all of us here. Those creatures saved us!

Yuna:(nods)Yes, they did. Well, let's go find the others

(Tidus carries Yuna then everyone walks through the forest)

(When you reach a certain spot in the woods)

Brother: Yuna!(waves his arms)

(Rikku pushes Brother out of the way)

Rikku: Yunie! guys! You're okay!(runs over and hugs Yuna)

Yuna: Of course we are. Well, my leg isn't

Rikku: Aw, you hurt yourself?

Yuna: It's okay, I'll be fine

Brother: I'm truly surprised we all survived. Those Whistler thingys really helped us!

Wakka: Yeah, it was like they knew we'd be in danger and helped us out, ya?

Chelsey:(swallows hard and starts twiddling her thumbs while thinking)That's right, they did know. That's what they told me

Yuna:(looks at Chelsey)Are you okay, Chels?

Tidus: You look like something's bothering you

Chelsey: Oh...sorry, I was just...you know...pondering

Cid:(walks over holding a piece of the Celsius)I can't believe a good airship that lasted Eighteen years just blows up! How ironic is that? And our only means of escape are gone!

Rikku: Oh get a grip, pops. Just be glad you're alive!

Brother: But he's right, we need the Celsius to escape!

Rikku: Argh! you two always get on my nerves!

Cid: Oh, and you don't get on anyone's nerves?

Rikku: Nope!

Nina: Yeah, Aunt Rikku is the best!

Rikku: That's right. Wait, this isn't everyone...where's Kimahri? and the girls's friends?

Nina: Probably like still in the woods!

Tidus: Well, let's go find them!

(When you reach a certain point in the woods)

Yava:(waves)Hey! you're alive!

(Yava and the others run over to the girls)

Nina: Baby-boo!

Melanie: Drama queen!(she and Nina hug each other)

Osric:(walks over to Nina scratching the back of his head)Hey, you okay?

Nina: Do you always have to ask that question?

Osric: No, but I do anyways...

Nina:(giggles and hugs Osric tightly)Aw that's sooo nice of you Ozzy!

Melanie: Yeah, like totally!

Osric: Hehehe...

Sam: Hey, Chels

Chelsey: Hey Sam!(walks over to Sam)Are you okay?

Sam:(nods and smiles)Now I am(whispers)Did you tell your parents about you being a fiend speaker?

Chelsey: Not yet, but I will. I don't think it's time yet

Yava:(stands by Simone and Vidina)Oh yeah, and that ronso elder dude we met in Gagazet was with us too!

Vidina: Kimahri?

(Kimahri walks over)

Yuna: Kimahri? you're okay!

Kimahri: Kimahri is always okay. When Yuna is okay so is Kimahri

Yuna:(giggles)How sweet of you

Nina: Are you always worried about my Mom? because she can like worry alot too

(Everyone starts laughing and Yuna pats Nina's back)

Yuna: Okay, that's enough honey. Well, not that we're all together, we should find a good spot and rest. It'd do good on my leg as well

Chelsey: Then what are we waiting for?

(When you walk around for a but then a scene starts with Sam and Chelsey talking)

Sam: Did the Whistlers say anything about the Shadow palo?

Chelsey:(shakes her head)Nope, I didn't get a chance to ask

Sam: Hmmm....they should know. It was a million years ago

Chelsey: I guess(looks at the sky and a bunch of pyreflies are in the sky)I wonder where we are, and how far we are from home

Tidus: Hey! you two! stay near everyone. There are some nasty fiends around here

Chelsey: Okay! Come on(She and Sam walk to the group)

Nina:(looks around frightened)I wonder if there's cannibals here...

Simone: Cannibals?

Nina: You know, humans that eat other humans? other humans like us

Chelsey: Hmmm(then she smiles trying to scare Nina)There might be a 99.99% chance that there's cannibals

Melanie: Oh no! we're gonna die!

Nina: I'm like too young to die!

Yuna: There are no cannibals! Just relax

Yava: Hey, wanna go check out the woods and see if there actually are cannibals?

Simone: Sounds cool. Can we go, Mom?

Vidina: Yeah, can we go?

Yuna: I don't know...it doesn't seem safe

Wakka: Well, stay together and don't go to far, ya?

Nina: Of course Wakka

Osric: Let's go peoplez!

(When you go to a certain point in the woods)

Nina: Oh, snap! I broke a nail!

Simone: shut-up, who cares?

Nina: Like, I do!

Sam: Hey, do you guys hear something?

Simone: No, why?

Yava: I don't hear nothing

Osric: Oooo, maybe it's cannibals!

Nina: Shut-up Osric! Don't make me hurt you!

Vidina: Well, I don't see anything. Let's go back

Simone: Oh, is Dine scared?

Vidina: Me? no way!

(Then they see a dark figure)

????: You know you're scared. You just won't say it so you look brave

Nina: CANNIBALS!

(everyone runs off screaming and the adults turn around to see the teens running screaming)

Rikku: What is it?

Osric: Cannibals! There's Cannibals!

Nina: We're doomed! doomed! D-O-M-E-D! Wait, is there two o's or just one?

????: There's two o's

Nina: AAAHHHHH! The cannibal corrected me! MOMMY!(runs to Yuna and grabs onto her)

????: Cannibal? you can't be serious!

Yuna: Who are you? show yourself!

(Then an old lady shows up)

Chelsey: It's just an innocent old lady!

Nina: Wait, what if she's an alien?

(The girls do the alien peace sign)

Simone: We come in peace, we mean no harm

????: I'm no alien either. I just happen to live here

Tidus: You LIVE here? How can you live here without T.V., Machina or food?

????: I hunt(everyone looks at her strangely)Oh, my apologies, my name is Terri. I haven't seen people for twenty years

Chelsey: You've been here for twenty years?

Terri:(nods)Correct(looks at Yuna)Lady Yuna?

Yuna: Yes, it's me

Terri: I see the Whistlers saved all of you and brought you here. Infact, I was expecting you

Tidus: Expecting us? Are you psychic?

Terri: No, but they told me

Chelsey: They? who's they?

Terri: You all seem tired, come with me. I'll bring you to my hut so you can all sleep.(looks at Yuna)My poor dear, you hurt yourself

Yuna: Yes, I twisted my leg

Terri: Don't worry. I'll fix that up. I have some herbs and spices that will heal that

Yuna: Thank you very much for your hospitality. And where are we may I ask?

Terri: Glitterenta Island. This the home to the Whistlers, well the last colony really. It's the only place in Spira humans never discovered until now of course

Chelsey:(thinking)Did she say Glitterenta island? wait! The Shadow palo must be here!

Terri: Well, come with me

(When you reach Terri's hut)

Terri: Well, we're here. Come inside, place her on my bed

(Tidus carries Yuna into the hut with the girls and places Yuna on the bed)

Terri: Let me take a good look at your leg(Lifts Yuna's dress to see the leg)Aha, I know just what you need(goes into a cabinet and wraps a type of leaf around Yuna's twisted leg)

Yuna: Are you sure this will work Terri?

Terri: Natural cures work better than medical cures

Chelsey: Finally, someone who agrees

Terri:(grabs a jar with a weird potion in it and pours it in a cup)Here my lady, drink this

Yuna:(drinks some of the potion then spits it out)Yuck! what is this?

Terri: It may taste bitter but it works. Please, drink it

Yuna: Okay(drinks the whole cup then places it on the table next to the bed)

Terri: Now rest for a couple of hours and your leg will be healed. That potion is made from the liquid of a dragon rose. It heals bones quicker than medicine. And that Zanar plant leaf I wrapped around your leg will soothe the pain

Yuna: Thank you very much(Closes her eyes and starts to sleep)

Simone: Well she be fine?

Terri: Of course, wait and see

Tidus: You better hope this works

(When you walk around and talk to everyone then go back near the hut)

(Inside the hut, Yuna is tossing and turning in the bed)

Yuna: Please! Stop it! Stop!

(Dream starts)

(You see Whistlers flying around then the shadow palo in the cave, then you see Seymour eclipsing the sun)

Yuna: What's going on?(looks at the eclipsed sky frightened then two large pair of eyes appear and she sees people screaming running around and buildings are on fire. Then she sees three angels hovering in the sky and they seem to resemble the girls then the girls are lying on the ground dead)GIRLS!!!(Then she turns to see Serena and it looks like she's saying something and Yuna falls back slowly then the dream ends)

Yuna:(wakes up)Whoa! Another weird dream. Wait...those dragons are the Whistlers and what's that gem in the cave? And why do I keep seeing the sun eclipsed? Hmmmm...my leg, it feels better!

(Tidus, Terri and the girls are waiting outside with the others and Yuna walks out)

Tidus:(walks over)Are you okay?

Yuna:(nods and smiles)Never better! I can't believe it worked! Thank you Terri

Terri:(nods)No problem. Now, you can all rest here and stay here as long as you want. And maybe I'll find a way to get you outta here

Yuna: Of course. Tidus, Wakka, you two should get some firewood. We stay here until we're all well-rested

Wakka: Come on Tidus!

Tidus: Coming!

Terri: Oh and I have plenty of sleeping bags. You can use them

Rikku: Thank you!(turns to Yuna)I like her Yunie, she seems nice

Yuna: Yeah, she does

(When you walk around and talk to everyone)

Tidus: Hey! we have firewood!(he and Wakka bring firewood)

(Later on, everyone is walking around while some are sitting around the fire)

Yuna: I wonder what these dreams mean...I've had these weird dreams often now. They're really starting to bother me

Nina: Maybe ot's telling you something that's going to happen in the future!

Yuna:(sighs)Maybe(looks to see Chelsey standing all by herself)Chels?

Chelsey:(turns around)W-What is it?

Yuna: Nothing. I just was wondering what you were doing. Why don't you sit with us, honey? it's much warmer here

Chelsey: It's okay. I'm fine(walks off towards Sam)Hey, Sam

Sam:(turns around)Oh, hey Chelsey. What's up?

Chelsey: Nothing much. Um, what do you think of Terri?

Sam: I can trust her. She seems really nice

Chelsey: I trust her too. And, there's something I need to tell you

Sam: What is it?

Chelsey: In the Underworld, I spoke to one of the Shadow lords, and she said that the Shadow palo is here

Sam: Here?

Chelsey: Yes, she said Glitterenta island. She also said that none of the Shadow lords are evil. They're all good, and they wanted to help me because they sensed Serena's presence near me. But Serena's long dead!

Sam: Yes, but she could be an unsent that is close to you. She might be here right now

Chelsey: Maybe, but I'm just confused right now. Maybe I can talk to Terri and ask her about the Shadow palo

Sam: You should. Then we can find it before Seymour does

Chelsey:(nodds)Right.(Her and Sam look at the sky then start heading to the campfire)Good night

Sam: Good night

(Chelsey goes to sit by her family)

Simone: Well, I'm tired. Are you guys going to bed?

Nina:(yawns)Yep

Tidus: I don't really trust that Terri lady, she could be a deceiver!

Paine: She does seem the type

Wakka: Remember how we trusted Seymour? and look where we ended up. He's so desperate to kill Yuna and her girls

Rikku: Well, didn't he seem kinda obvious?

Lulu: It's true he did

Yuna: Well, I'm going to bed. Good night

Everyone: Good night

Simone: Sleep tight

Nina: Don't let the fiends bite(giggles)

(After you rest, Chelsey wakes up and it's dawn)

*Chelsey: Whoa, nice sunrise.(stretches her arms and tries to be quiet because everyone is sleeping)
(When you walk to Terri)*

Chelsey:(walks slowly to Terri)Um, Terri?

Terri:(turns around)Ah, you need to ask me something?

Chelsey: Uh, yes I do.(walks over beside Terri, takes a deep breath then looks at Terri)Do you know anything about the Shadow palo? or anything related to the Underworld? Because that's the reason why

we're here

Terri: I know. The Whistlers told me. They told me that you and the others would come here and that you and your sisters are the Angels of Eternal light and you're a fiend speaker

Chelsey:(giggles nervously)They told you all of that? Please don't tell my parents

Terri: Don't worry your secret's safe with me. Plus, I'm a fiend speaker as well

Chelsey:(blinks her eyes surprised)Really? That's why you understand the Whistlers!(hits her head)Duh! Why didn't I realize it before! This is so awesome! I thought I'd never meet another fiend speaker!

Terri:(smiles)Well now you have. So, how come you don't want to tell your parents? Your mother seems very nice and caring. Infact she told me a bit about you

Chelsey:(blinks surprised)Really?

Terri: She said you're quiet and you don't talk very much. But you're very smart and kind. She loves you very much, she wonders why you try avoiding talking to her. She's kind of worried about you

Chelsey:(thinks for a moment and looks away)Well, I just don't feel right when I'm around my family...I feel empty. Because I'm not like any of them, I enjoy nature, learning about history, reading and writting. But, none of them have the same interests I do. Plus the fact that my sisters are outgoing, talkative, and have lots of friends. But I'm quiet, shy, and I only have one friend: Sam.(looks at Terri)I start to feel like I don't belong, and lonely. People think I'm weird and don't talk to me, and I never talk about anything interesting it seems. Plus on top of that I'm a fiend speaker

Terri: You have a very rare gift, child. You shouldn't tell others but your parents might not even care. I think your mother would still love you. But then you could be right, people are afraid of things they don't truly understand

Chelsey:(nodds)Yeah. But I'm afraid that if they find out, they might not love me anymore and lock me up in a room and feed me fish heads once a week!

Terri:(laughing)I don't think so! Anyways, you should tell them soon because they'll get suspicious. And your mother would probably want to know why you don't like talking to her

Chelsey: I'll tell them when I know time is right. My sisters, their friends and my friend Sam already know. But, I'm more worried about my parents finding out

Terri: Don't worry I won't tell them. I too had a hard time telling my parents

Chelsey: Really?

Terri: Yes, but eventually I told them, they kinda freaked out and told the maesters of Yevon. So they arrested me and had me locked up because they were afraid I'd cause chaos because Fiend speakers have the powers of darkness. Luckily I found a way out and escaped on a ferry, but Sin attacked it and I got separated from the ferry and ended up here, for twenty years...

Chelsey: So you're not really that old then, you just look older because you lived here far away from society for so long. I'm so sorry, what if my parents do the same?

Terri: Your parents seem different. I think they'd still accept you. Oh, look up there, in the sky

Chelsey:(looks up and spots an aurora in the sky)Wow, it's so exquisite...so pretty...

Terri: It sure is. So, anything else?

Chelsey: Well, about the Shadow palo and about my sisters and I being the Angels of Eternal light...

Yuna: You two are up early!(Terri and Chelsey turn around and Yuna walks over and yawns)So, what are you talking about?

Chelsey:(looks away)Uh...we...uh...

Terri: I'm sorry my lady, it's between us

Chelsey: Oh right, sorry Mom

Yuna: That's okay.(strokes Chelsey's hair)What do you think of this island, Chels?

Chelsey: It's cool, I guess

Yuna: Come on, can't you be a little more descriptive?(pats Chelsey's back)Hmm?

Chelsey:(giggles nervously)I dunno(yawns then walks off towards the fire to sleep)

Yuna:(looks ahead at Chelsey)Poor Chels(sighs)She's just so scared talking to me. I don't know why though. I'm so worried about her

Terri: Don't worry she'll be fine

Yuna: I hope so

Terri: Well, I'm going back to bed(walks off)

(Yuna stares at the sky then sighs and goes to bed. Now, the next day, Simone and the others wake up. After you go to the hut)

Simone:(stretches her arms)Ah, that was a good nap(Then Terri comes out of her hut)Good mornin'

Terri: Good morning dear. Well, now that everyone's rested, should we start thinking of a way to get all of you home?

Simone: I guess(turns around and Vidina walks over and stands beside her)Hey Dine

Vidina: Hey Kool Katt. Well uh...(scratches his head)Should we tell Terri about our search for the Shadow palo?

Terri: I already know

Simone: You do?

Terri:(nods)The Whistlers told me.(whispers)I'm a fiend speaker like your sister

Vidina: Whoa! you are? And how did you know that Chelsey's a fiend speaker?

Simone: ssssh! not so loud!

Terri: She told me. Well actually the Whistlers did, too. So, you need to know where the Shadow palo is?

Simone:(nods)Yeah!

(Yuna, Rikku, Tidus, Paine, Wakk and Kimahri walk over)

Rikku: So, what are we going to do?

Vidina: We have to find the Shadow palo!

Yuna: Shadow palo? Hmmm, I heard Seymour say something about finding the Shadow palo. What is it anyways?

Simone: A powerful gem that we're looking for. It holds all the evil in the world, and if the evil one claims it...all of the shadows will rise!

Tidus: So that's why you want to stop Seymour so badly. But, what if he's not the evil one?

Rikku: He's crazy enough to be the evil one

Lulu: Hmmm...the shadow palo...never heard of it

Vidina: We saw it on a movie sphere, Mom. But we can't get it unless we get off this island

Chelsey: We don't have to!

(Everyone turns around)

Wakka: Uh...what do you mean, Chels?

Chelsey: Uh...um...uh...(thinking)Why did I say that? They're gonna wonder how I know! I can't tell them that I can talk to shadows!

Yuna: Chels?

Sam: Ahem. She means that it could be on this island! And that the Whistlers saving us is a coincidence!

Chelsey: Uh, yeah!(whispers to Sam)Thank you. I owe you

Terri: She's right

(Everybody gasps)

Paine: So this Shadow palo thingy is on this island?

Simone: You mean the whole time it was here?

Nina: Hey! So like what's going on?

Vidina: The shadow palo is on this island! we'll definately find it before Seymour does

Melanie: sounds like totally awesome, right Drama queen?

Nina: So right Baby-boo!

Yuna: So, where to?

Terri: Mt.Ganitor. It's a long climb but I'm sure it's on the summit. I've never actually been to the summit but I know it's there

Tidus: Well, let's go!

(When you reach the mountain entrance, it is surrounded by pyreflies and fog)

Nina: Whoa! This place is like so awesome!

Yava: I'll say(then she hears a loud thump)Hey! what's that?

Simone: I don't know

(Then a huge fiend starts stomping over)

Terri: I totally forgot, this mountain is guarded by this fiend. It only lets me through

Simone: Well, can't you stop it?

Terri: I'm sorry. But it won't obey me if there are strangers about

Simone: Then we kill it!

Nina: Right on sister!

AFTER BATTLE

Terri: Alright, into Mt. Ganitor. Follow me

(After everyone walks off, Chelsey just stands there)

Chelsey: That fiend...there was something odd...I felt it's...feelings

(everyone turns around)

Tidus: Chelsey, come on! Do you want to find this Shadow thingy or not?

Chelsey: Yes, but I felt that fiend's sadness!

Kimahri: Fiends die and are sent to Farplane. Misery will disappear

Chelsey: Yes I know but, it was sad! sad over the death of it's human life! Fiends were orginally humans right?

Terri: Chelsey, you knew what you had to do. Now, let's go

Chelsey:(looks at the mountain then follows the others and starts thinking)Maybe that pain I feel after I defeat a fiend or shadow is it's sorrow...fiends and shadows aren't pure evil, they're nice creatures in the inside, which means no one or nothing is pure evil. Just like Kirana said

Yuna: come on Chelsey!

(Chelsey runs after the others)

(In a certain point in the mountain, you see everyone walking then you see a beautiful crystal water spring with pyreflies)

Terri: This is the spring of course

Chelsey: Wow

Simone: It's so beatiful!

Osric: It almost looks like it's glowing!

Chelsey: If only people took the time to notice beautiful things like this

Nina: I want to swim in it!

Yuna: Not right now honey. Remember, we're looking for thr Shadow palo

Nina: Oh, right. Can we come back later, Mom?

Yuna: Of course, Nina

(The Whistlers are drinking and bathing in the spring)

Chelsey:(giggles)The Whistlers sure like it in the spring!

Terri: They come here to relax. And to forget about their sorrow. They did have a terrible past

Chelsey: Oh, right

(Now scene ends. When you are halfway through the mountain cave another scene starts)

Nina: How much longer? my feet hurt!

Yuna: Nina, please stop complaining

Nina: But I'm tired of all this walking! Can't we take a break?*(stands there with her arms crossed and Simone sneaks up behind her)*

Simone: Marshmellow!

Nina: AAAAAAHHHH! MOM!

(Simone, Chelsey and their friends laugh)

Yuna:*(sighs)* Maybe a break would be a good idea

Wakka: So, what else is in this cave besides that Shadow thing?

Terri: You might want to keep an eye out for traps, there might be some

Chelsey:*(looks on the cave walls and notices glyphs)* Whoa, look at all of these glyphs I wonder what they all mean?

Terri: These were written long ago by some civilization. I still can't interpret them though

Yuna:*(walks over)* Hmmm... These glyphs do seem familiar

Chelsey: How? You've seen these before, Mom?

Yuna: I think so... maybe from my dreams

Terri: Dreams?

Yuna: I've been having these really weird dreams, about an eclipse, a huge monster, two kids and everyone dead

Terri: These are not ordinary dreams, my lady. These are visions, they are warning you

Yuna: About what?

Simone:*(walks over with Nina)* Mom! Nina keeps bothering me!

Nina: Nooooo I'm not!

Yuna: Girls! please settle down. And come on, you're older now, smartin' up!

Simone: Fine.*(leans against a wall with glyphs and yawns)* I'm so bored

(Then the wall moves and the girls fall down a tunnel)

Yuna: GIRLS!!!!*(then the wall closes and she bangs on it)* Open up! OPEN UP!

Tidus: Honey, it's no use

Yuna:*(panics)* What are we going to do?

Terri: Quick, follow me!

(The girls are screaming down the tunnel then land somewhere in a chamber)

Nina: Owie! MY HAIR!!! where are we???

Simone: I don't know, why ask me?

Chelsey: Man, why do we always end up in the traps?

Nina+Simone:*(shrug)* I dunno

Nina: Luck, I suppose?

Simone: Well, let's find a way outta here!

(When the girls run off you see some wolf like figure watching them then it takes off. After the scene, you have to complete some kind of cloister of trials then another scene starts)

Nina: How exhausting! This adventure has been nothing but-

Simone: Nina just shut-up and stop complaining!

Nina: Nooooo don't tell me to shut-up! it's rude!

?????: Geez just shut-up you damn prep!

Nina: What the hell? who said that? AND I'M NOT A DAMN PREP!

*(Then a red wolf with a weird headress on appears. *By the way that is RedXIII and I do not own him, he is from ff7 and don't get me in trouble I don't own him I wanted to add him cause he kicks @\$\$*)*

????: If you dare to pass challenge me!

Simone: Don't worry, this won't hurt a bit!

AFTER BATTLE

Simone: Alright let us pass! and what is your name???

Red: M'names RedXIII. But just call me Red, why are three girls such as yourselves doing all the way on this undiscovered island?

Chelsey: We crashed here. I'm sorry if we disturbed you in any way Red...

Red: Hey no prob kiddo. Hey...you three look familiar, especially you(looks at Chelsey)

Chelsey: Me? uh have we met?

Red: No, but you look like someone...hm...oh well.

Simone: You must live here with Terri right?

Red: Why yes I do. Well if you know her then I could trust you guys I guess

Simone: Well can you help us find the others? well our friends and our parents?

Red: There's others with you? wow, this island is no longer undiscovered. Well, follow me girls

Nina: So, what do you do here anyways?

Red: I'm the guardian of this mountain, the fiend that guarded the mountain gate wasn't really the guard. He was just guarding his territory, But I've known Terri since she crashed here and I never thought I'd see other humans in a long time

Chelsey: Well, thanks for not killing us Red, those fangs of yours seem pretty sharp

Red:(chuckles)Hey I'm not as violent as I look. Come on, follow me
(When you go down a path)

Vidina: Hey! you guys are okay!

Simone: Well we're still in the zone!(she and Vidina high five)

Yuna:(walks over worried)Are you okay?

Nina: Of course we're okay! geez Mom, breathe!

Rikku: Yay! the girls are okay now Yunie doesn't have to panic!

Tidus:(looks at Red)Hey, who's that red wolf guy?

Chelsey: Oh, that's Red. we met him in the cave, he helped us out and he knows Terri I guess

Tidus: Well thanks for looking after my daughters

Terri: Red may seem stubborn at times but really he's very kind hearted

Simone: Oh I see...(then smiles and giggles)then you're just a red softie!

(Everyone laughs and Red looks away)

Red: Hey that's not funny!

Chelsey: Come on you guys! do you wanna find the Shadow palo or not?

Terri: Of course we do. Let's head on to the summit!

(The others run off and Simone and Vidina stay behind)

Vidina: I can't believe it...this adventure is almost over...

Simone: Yeah, I know. It was a great one I know that

Yava: Come on lovers!

Vidina: Hey! we're not lovers Warrior chick!

Yava: Yeah sure whatever Dine

Simone+Vidina:(look at one another)Let's go!

(Then Simone and Vidina run off and a familar figure walks by and stands watching Simone and Vidina run and it's Auron)

Auron: Man was escaping hard. So that's how Seymour escaped, from those holes Vegnagun made. I have to tell the angels to make haste or the Farplane will be swallowed by darkness!

(Now when you reach a certain point in the chamber)

We were tired so we decided to rest there. But, I kept thinking about the truth behind the Shadow palo and how it connected with Mom's dreams. So I decided to go think about it...And then...

(When you go down the path and you arrive at a spring)

Simone: Another spring? cool(dives into it then swims up and floats on her back)Ah...relaxing

(As Simone floats, Vidina comes over and stands at the edge watching)

Vidina: Uh...hey Kool Katt

(Simone looks up then swims over)

Simone: Hey! Are you going to come in?

Vidina: Uh...yeah, I am(dives into the spring then swims over to Simone)So, what do you think of this journey so far?

Simone: Cool, I guess. I came here to relax and think about stuff. Like Mom having these weird dreams and my sisters and I being Angels of Eternal light...keys to the Gateway to Eternal light...where is this gateway I wonder, and why are we the Angels? why us?

Vidina: Hmmm, I don't know sorry. Uh...do you think Seymour will find out where we are and try to take you again?

Simone: Probably. But I'm not scared of him, he's a psychopath. No wonder Mckelly's so twisted!

Vidina:(laughs)Tell me about it! So, anything you wanna talk about?

Simone: Not really(looks at the pyreflies)But I sure have a story to tell when I get home

Vidina: Uh...story? what story?

Simone:(giggles)Oh come on you know, our search for the palo? and the problems we've faced. It'd be something great to tell everyone, wouldn't it?

Vidina: Yeah, I guess. And it'd be awesome if we found out more about the shadows, you and your sisters being Angels to Eternal light and...Sam! oh yeah, he's been hiding things, I know it!

Simone: Yeah. He'll spill the beans soon, just watch(looks at Vidina)You know, this story wouldn't be good without you in it

Vidina: R-Really?

Simone: Yeah(swims closer)After all, this is my story.(hugs Vidina and leans against him and Vidina starts to blush)You've been a good friend, it wouldn't be a good story without you

(Vidina and Simone stare at each other)

Vidina: Then it's my story too

(Vidina and Simone lean forwards each other getting ready to kiss)

Simone:(pulls back)No, No! I'm not ready for this yet!(swims out of the spring)

Vidina: Hey! Wait!

Maybe this wasn't such a good idea I thought then...Not yet

(After you sleep then wake up, you see Simone and Vidina nodd at each other and Nina and Melanie jump excitedly and Red grunts and everyone walks on)

MEANWHILE SOMEWHERE ELSE ON THE ISLAND

Mckelly: What is this place Dad? I've never seen it before. Is the Shadow palo here?

Seymour: Beats me, but I had another vision from my god and he says it is on an undiscovered island and those stupid silver dragons lead us here, an undiscovered island! Those girls aren't safe for long!

Jake: Well, they may be a handful considering they are the Angels of Eternal light. Maybe that's why the lord wants you to steal their lives, they contain powers that no one has or can control...And you can get revenge on Lady Yuna at the same time

Seymour: Hmmm...that's right, the Angels of Eternal light are the only ones who can truly destroy the Shadows and the darkness and get rid of all the evil in the world and make Spira live in Eternal peace. And if I steal their souls...it'd make me powerful and allow me to become unstoppable and share my power with my god!

Mckelly: So, the reason why there's evil in the world is because of the shadow palo?

Seymour: Correct my dear. You see, The daughters of Yuna may be the keys to the gateway of Eternal light, but I will make them the keys to the gateway to Eternal darkness!

Muahahahahahahahahahahaha!

Mckelly: Where is this so called gateway?

Jake: Maybe it's not a gateway...it could be something else. You never know, we learned lots of stuff that was unexpected

Seymour: You're right Jake, now let's go and find the Shadow palo!

Gawk: Yep yep find palo and stop stupid girls!

Mckelly: Men! come on we're leaving now!

(Now Mckelly, Seymour, Jake, Gawk and the guado and lizard men head to Mt. Ganitor)

BACK IN MT.GANITOR

(When you go through the tunnels and you enter a very big chamber and some kind of hymn is playing in it)

Cid: Well I'll be! what is this place?

Terri: The chamber of time. It for some unknown reason can show you different times and important events. Just like what happened one million years ago...

Sam:(bites his lip)About Timothy, right?

Terri: Correct

Red: This chamber is full of lots of secrets, not even I RedXIII the guardian of Mt.Ganitor knows them.

Terri is still trying to figure them out

Chelsey: Well, I want to see the different times!

Rikku: Yeah, can we see them now?

Terri: Hold on(drops a stone into a little pond in the center of the chamber then it makes a vibrating sound and then the chamber changes into a big city)This is what the world looked liked one million years ago. Infact, before Spira came to be

Nina: Wicked(goes over to Yuna)Hey Mom, is this totally cool or what?

Yuna:(giggles)Yes it is, honey

Tidus: Man, people looked so different. And where's all the machina?

Terri: There was none. Well, there were machines but not as advanced. Where Serena and Timothy's story takes place is in a little village

(then the chamber changes into a village with kids running around and you see Timothy and Serena standing on a hill looking at the sky)

Yuna: This village...those two kids...they were in my dreams!

Chelsey: Timothy and Serena?

Nina: Whoa, now that we get to see a good view of Serena, she looks alot like you Chels...but with blonde hair

Chelsey: Wow, I haven't noticed that...she does look alot like me

Serena: Beautiful view? eh?

Timothy: Sure is. But, I want the whole world to see a beautiful view, without pain, suffering, or war. I want peace, and I'm going to bring it

(Now shows the village of fire being attacked by an army of warriors, and Sam watches shocked close to tears)

Chelsey: Sam? what's wrong? what's happening?

Terri: There was a huge war I gather. They were slaughtering everyone in the village

Timothy: Serena! we have to get outta here! they're gonna slaughter everyone in the village!

Yuna: Hey, that's exactly what he said in my dream!

Sam:(a tear goes down his cheek and Chelsey looks at him surprised)There was a huge war like Terri said, when man showed inhumanity to man. Everyone hated each other because of differences, the way they lived, and one day a huge war around the globe started and lots of people were killed...
(then you see Samayo running around looking for his parents)
Samayo: Mom! Dad! Mom! Dad!
Chelsey: Samayo...he was mentioned in one of the movie spheres. He looks exactly like you when you were little...Sam
Sam: I...know
Serena:(runs over to Samayo)Samayo, where's your parents?
Samayo:(crying)I don't know! I can't find them! They might be dead!
Serena: Don't worry! We'll find them! come on!
(then Samayo and Serena find Timothy kneeled on the ground crying. You see his parents dead)
Samayo: Mom! Dad! NOOOOOO!(starts crying)
Timothy: I'm sorry Sam, I tried to save them...I was too late
(then the chamber changes into another town and people are gathered around and Timothy and Serena are tied up)
Timothy: Let us go! I made that palo so I could bring peace! I can stop this madness! I can!
Serena: Please let us go!
(then a bunch if guards grab Timothy and bring him to an excutioner and they chain him up right in front of the excutioner)
Timothy: Fine, kill me. Don't cry to me when this world falls apart
person: Silence you brat! spreading this non-sense about a palo bringing peace. Excutioner! kill him now!
(the excutioner sharpens his blade and gets ready to strike Timothy)
Serena: NOOOOOOOO!
(Then Timothy is struck in the stomach and he falls down lifeless. You see Kirana, Samayo and Timothy's friends all crying and Serena tries to brake free)
Serena: TIMOTHY! WHYYYYYYY?! WHY DID YOU KILL HIM?!!!!
person: Shut-up fiend speaker, you deserve to be punished as well for heloing this rebel and for being a fiend speaker: a traitor to mankind
Serena: Traitor to mankind? mankind betrays one another everyday! You're telling me I'm a traitor! I wanted to save the world not destroy it like you!
Chelsey: Sounds like something I'd say...
(then the excutioner strikes Serena's heart and Chelsey feels pain and feels her chest and watches helplessly as Serena falls dead)
Chelsey:(thinking)Why do I feel Serena's pain? Are we connected somehow? And why does she look so much like me...
(then you see Sam crying)
Sam: Why did they have to die, why did Mom and Dad have to die? why did the war have to happen?
Chelsey:(looks at Sam)You're not from Spira are you?
(then the chamber is back to normal)
Terri: And that's what happened
Yuna: How upsetting. The world seemed really terrible
Red: Yeah, I still don't get humans and their wars
Terri: Well it got worse after the evil god was born
Chelsey: The evil god? you mean king of the shadows?
Osric: That god Seymour worships?

Sam: Gaeltron

(everyone looks at him)

Tidus: How do you know these things?

Sam: I...um

Yuna: It's alright, dear

Sam: I'm not from Spira, heck not even from this time. I'm from one million years ago. I travelled here somehow, I don't know how. And that little boy, was me

Chelsey: I knew it, maybe that's why when I first met you, you had no idea where you were. So, which means...Timothy's your brother

Sam: Yes. Those people slaughtered my parents then executed my brother and Serena. I wanted to go back in time and stop this war, luckily my wish came true but not exactly how I wanted it...I was sent into the future a million years later and met Chelsey

Chelsey: So Gaeltron is that monster or god that Seymour is going to bring to the living world?

Sam:(nodds)The palo he made collected all the evil from the world, hate, envy, greed, and prejudice. But Timothy had so much hate it somehow made the palo transform into some other kind of palo: The Shadow palo as you've learned and it mutated him. All his hate lived on and he became Gaeltron, he destroyed all of the people who killed my parents and the people of my village when he rose for the very first time. But he was so full of rage he killed everyone in the world. Then I remember I was the only one left, I saw Gaeltron deep inside I knew he was my brother so I followed him But then...I saw the Whistlers all gathering singing a song, a song from my childhood. The world started to shine, pyreflies flew around me, I could see everyone who died walking to this light, and Gaeltron sunk to the ground, and was trapped there. Then, the world was created once again. But, I woke up and found myself on Besaid shore

Terri: Interesting, I should've known, you have a link with the otherworld. The Farplane and the Underworld are connected to it too, right? I think you have discovered the truth

Simone: the truth?

Terri: Everything in Spira is connected to Sam's world. Infact Spira is a song based on Sam's world...like a dream song really. So in a way Spira isn't really well...real

Simone: So that's what the Fayth meant by my home being a special kind of dream, he really meant Spira is that special dream

Sam: And time is repeating itself once again only in a different way, but this time if we don't do something quick Spira will fall like the otherworld and all of this will happen again

Nina: A deja vu?

Chelsey: We can't let time repeat itself! maybe that's why Simone, Nina and I are the three angels, we are meant to open the gateway to light which is within every one of us...the good in us and we have to destroy the darkness and The Shadow palo for good to get rid of the world's evil before time repeats once again

Terri: Yes, you have learned much. Now let's go find the Shadow palo and destroy it

Simone: Yeah!

(When you reach the summit)

Chelsey: Sam?

Sam: Yeah?

Chelsey: Why didn't you say anything before? My Dad is from a different time too

Sam: Well, I thought you'd think I'm crazy

Yuna: Hurry up you two! we're almost there!

Sam:(walks off then looks at Chelsey)By the way thanks for everything

Chelsey: Are you going to leave? After the shadow palo is destroyed?

Sam: I don't know. By the way, I've always had this weird feeling...a warm fuzzy feeling. It hurts sometimes but then it feels great

Chelsey: Love?

Sam:(looks shocked)L-Love? How do you know?

Chelsey:(smiles)I'm a girl, I know these things

Sam: I guess you do. If we destroy the Shadow palo, I'm going to find a way back home. And stop everything from happening

Chelsey: No! stay!

Sam: I can't Chelsey, my work here is done. I found my destiny, you'll find yours eventually.

(When he walks off, Chelsey sighs then follows him)

What Chelsey told me was that Sam was a wonderful friend to her and she told me exactly what they talked about and what happened between them. But what was going to happen next changed her life forever...

(In the Shadow palo chamber)

Nina: We finally made it! All we need to do is steal it and destroy it!

Osric: Easier said than done

Vidina: But, I have a feeling Seymour's gonna show up

Yava: Geez Dine, don't worry, we'll kick his butt if he shows up

Nina: Who does that guy think he is anyways?

Simone: I dunno. He's such a creep! He tried to marry Mom and kiss her, i'm pretty sure he's crazy!

Nina: Ahem(tries to imitate Seymour)Come with me Lady Yuna, and we shall rule the world!

Muahahahahahahaha!

(Then everyone starts laughing and Yuna smiles)

Yuna: Pretty good imitation there Nina

Tidus: Come on you guys, we're here!

Red:(snorts>About time

Rikku: Wow, this place is cool

Terri: We'll stay here, and keep an eye out incase something comes

Simone: Nina, Chelsey and I will get the palo and bring it here!

Nina: Like totally!

Yuna: Becareful girls

Chelsey: We will, Mom!

(The girls run off and Red smiles)

Red: So, those three young ladies are the Angels of Eternal light eh?

Terri: Yes, they are our only hope of destroying evil and bringing eternal peace to this world. And they must stop time from repeating itself

Sam: They'll stop it, I know they will...

Vidina: Yeah, me too, ya?

Osric: I think we all believe in them. They are our friends after all...(thinking)Go get em Nina

(Now scene ends and another one starts when you go into a very dark chamber and run up the very long stairs and you reach a floating platform and it goes to the Shadow palo alter)

Nina: Whoa, that palo looks creepy

(Then the ground starts shaking and the girls look around then the statue standing behind the shadow palo alter stands up and looks down at the girls. The statue looks like a huge gargoyle with ruby eyes)

Nina: AAAAHHHHHHH! THE STATUE IS ALIVE!

Simone: I knew this was a trap(takes out her sword and runs towards the statue)

AFTER BATTLE

Simone:(grabs the palo out of the altar)Yay! we got it!

Nina: Oh yeah we are so like number#1! Yohooooo!

(The girls go on the floating platform)

Seymour: Good job, girls/ You really are useful. hahahahahahahahaha

Nina: AAAHHH! It's the Guado dude! Seymour!

Simone: You're not getting the Shadow palo you creep!

Seymour: I'm not? We'll see about that

Nina: Yeah, we're like all the way here. Nananananana!(The the platfrom moves towards Seymour and

Nina falls back on her butt and she and her sisters panick)Dammit!

Chelsey:(rolls her eyes)Nice going Nina...

Nina: Well it's like totally not my fault!

Seymour: Give me the palo! Now!

Simone: No!

Mckelly:(runs up the stairs and stands beside Seymour)Yes! give him the palo you dog!

Simone: Shut-up Goblin!

Gawk:(flies around Mckelly and lands on her shoulder)Shut-up! Shut-up! Give the palo to us!

Seymour: Give it or your friends die. The choice is yours

Simone:(glares and clenches her fist)I'm not afraid of you

Seymour: Do I look like I care? Give me the palo! NOW!!!

(Simone looks back and forth at Seymour and her sisters then throws the Shadow palo down the bottomless gorge)

Seymour: NOOOOOOOOO!!!

Gawk:(dives down and grabs the palo and flies up)I got it!

Nina: I like so hate flying reptiles! including dragons!

Seymour: Mckelly, let's go!

Mckelly: No, you go. I'll hold these brats off

(When Seymour runs off the girls chase after him and Mckelly chases after the girls)

Mckelly: Hey! get back here you fools!

(When you run down the path in the chamber and you reach the end of it)

Mckelly:(jumps infront of the girls)If you're gonna pass, fight me!

Simone: Bring it on!

Nina: Yeah you're like just going to lose anyways!

Chelsey: Haven't you learned by now that we're the Angels of Eternal light? we are the keys to the gateway of Eternal light, and the only ones who can truly derstroy the darkness and evil!

Mckelly: I don't give a damn what you three are, darkness is way more powerful than pitiful light. Do you even know where this gateway is?

Simone: It isn't really a gateway, it is the good in everyone and everything, we are the ones who will use that good which is the light and destroy the darkness!

Mckelly: Whatever. Oh and just to let you know, now that my Dad has the palo, I can use some of it's powers and I will become powerful! So I won't be as easy as I was!(a whirlwind of darkness forms around and she is trapped in it then bursts free with huge demon wings and she is hovering and holding a huge dark sword)Try to stop me now! MUAHAHAHAHAHAHAHA...coughcough(takes puffer)Damn asthma

AFTER BATTLE

Mckelly:(falls to her kness back as her normal self)Why...why? those powers were useless

Chelsey: Don't you see Mckelly, you let the darkness within you swallow you up. The light in you is fading, you still have a chance to be good, but once that light fades there's no turning back

Mckelly: What the hell are you talking about?

Nina: Come on! We have to get Seymour!

(The girls run off and Mckelly reaches out her hand)

Mckelly: No! come back! Oh...damn it all(passes out)

(When you run farther down the path and go to Terri who is lying on the ground)

Simone: Terri!

(The girls all sit around around her)

Nina: Are you okay?

Terri: Don't worry, I'll be okay. Just get the Shadow palo back, if he releases Gaeltron from the Underworld, Spira will fall

Simone: We're not going to let you die Terri!

Chelsey: None of this would've been possible without you

Terri: I'm not gonna die. I'll be fine, I'll catch up to you you'll see. Go, now!

Nina: But...

Simone: It's no use Nina, we have to. It's either her or Spira

Nina: Yeah you're right.

(Simone and Nina run off but Chelsey stands there looking at Terri worried)

Terri: Don't worry Chelsey, I'll catch up I promise

Chelsey: But, I can't just leave someone who is badly hurt behind, I just can't...it's not right

Terri: I'm getting pretty old anywys. You have a long life ahead of you, you're still so young. Go save Spira, you and your sisters are this world's only hope. Go!

Chelsey:(sighs)Okay then. Please get better(Then she runs off and joins her sisters)

(When you reach the mountain path outside)

Nina: Where is Seymour? and where are the others?

Chelsey: Maybe his men are attacking them, and drove them off. I don't know

Nina: We got separated so many times now. We honestly like must have bad luck

Simone: Cheyah(looks around the area)It's kinda chilly, wanna go back inside?

Chelsey: But we have to get Seymour! maybe we can corner him at the entrance outside

Nina:(does a thumbs up)Good plan Chels! And then we'll find the others!

(Nina and Chelsey take off but Simone senses someone nearby. Then Jake jumps down from a ledge in front of Simone)

Jake: Hello Simone, nice to meet you again

Simone:(glares)You...all because of your girlfriend and her father millions of lives are about to be destroyed!

Jake: Do I look like I care? Not a tear would be shed for this world, it's pitiful. Everybody relays too much on machina, and your mother. Why would you want to save a bunch of idiots? Let them die for all I care, they haven't done anything for this world

Simone: Say all you want, I won't let anyone die! They don't deserve it

Jake:(has an evil grin)Sure they don't...

Simone: Why don't you shut the hell up?

Jake: swearing isn't going to solve anything

(Simone yells and charges at him ready to punch him but Jake blocks her)

Simone: Shut the hell up! Dammit!

Jake: I don't want to fight

Simone: Too scared?

Jake: No, it'll be a waste of time. For two years I've been apart of this evil plan, Seymour has planned this for seventeen years now, I won't let his plan be ruined by you or your sisters. I don't care if you three

are the Angels of Eternal light, we can use you for Eternal darkness

Simone: Damn you Jake!(goes to punch him but Jake dodges her)Come on fight back! You rotten bastard!

Jake: Join us Simone, you'll become powerful. And you'll get to kill all the people you want(walks to Simone with his arms open)Join us, and you'll become invincible. I won't take no for an answer

Simone: Oh yeah(takes out one of her guns)Well, then hows this for an answer!(looks away with her eyes closed when she shoots him. Then opens one eye at a time and looks at Jake on the ground bleeding)

Jake: Simone, why? Why...(then he dies)

(Simone breathes heavily full of rage)

Simone: There's your answer jackass!(Walks off)

(After Simone runs off, Mckelly appears and sees Jake lying dead on the ground)

Mckelly: Jakey!(looks ahead at Simone)You'll pay for this Simone! I'm going to kill you!!!

(When you're almost all the way down the outside mountain path)

Mckelly: SIMONE!!!!

(Simone looks up and Mckelly is standing on a rock)

Simone: What the hell do you want?

Mckelly: You killed my boyfriend you dog! What the hell were you thinking? Just because he didn't like you doesn't mean you had a right to kill him

Simone: Fine(takes out her guns)I'll shoot you too!(starts shooting her guns at Mckelly but mckelly dodges the shots and jumps down and kicks Simone)

Mckelly: Let's settle this once and for all!(she grabs out her stupid looking staff with a bat thingy at the end of it and Simone takes out her sword that Yuna gave her and Simone charges at her)

Mckelly: TAKE THIS dog!(charges at Simone as well)

(Mckelly tries to cast a powerful spell at Simone but Simone dodges it and slashes her sword and now Simone tries pushing Mckelly's staff out of the way and they clash with one another then Mckelly kicks her and puskes her off the cliff but luckily Simone grabs a ledge after sliding down and tries to get up but Mckelly jumps down onto the ledge)

Mckelly: I guess this is goodbye! Hope you enjoy your painful death Simone!

Muahahahahahahaha....(coughs then takes puffer)

Simone: We'll see about that!

(Simone jumps back onto the ledge and she and Mckelly punch and kick each other and they fall off the ledge still fighting then they start screaming and Simone grabs onto a ledge but Mckelly falls down the cliff and lands on top of Seymour who is running out of the mountain with Gawk and the Mcclouds)

Seymour: Get off me!

Mckelly: AAAHHHH! sorry Daddy!

Simone:(starts slipping off the ledge)Someone! Help! Help!

(Then Nina and Chelsey appear with their friends)

Yava: Simone! Come on, we have to save her!

Vidina: SIMONE!

Yava:(reaches her hand)Simone, grab my hand! Now!

(Simone grabs Yava's hand and Yava pulls her up)

Simone: Phew. Thanks Yav

Chelsey: Geez, where did you go?

Simone: I had a little fight with Mckelly because I shot Jake

Nina: You WHAT?

Osric: That jerk deserved it anyways, He tried to kill you

Simone: Yeah, you're right

Melanie: Come on! the adults are like waiting for us! Seymour took off you know!

Sam: We better get him soon, if he finds out how to activate the Shadow palo, the sun will be eclipsed! and the shadows will rise

Vidina: And time will repeat itself!

Simone: Yeah, and maybe we can find out more about Spira being a song and why Nina, Chelsey and I are the Angels of Eternal light?

Nina: Yeah! It's all up to us Eaglewings!(puts her hand out)Who's in?

Melanie: I like am so with you Nina, you are my B.F.F. after all!

Yava: Wow Nina, you sure are enthusiastic about this

Nina: Yep! I like so am!

*Osric:(puts his hand on Nina's and looks at her and she blushes at him)I am
(everyone else puts their hand in)*

Yava: Us too!

Simone: One, two, three...

All: EAGLEWINGS!!!!

(Then everyone runs off giggling and Simone and Yava do some back flips then high five and the scene ends. When you go down to the path in the cave you see the adults there and another scene starts)

Wakka: Hey y'all! Whazzup!

Vidina: Hey pops!(looks at Lulu who has a worried look on her face and shakes her head)What's the matter Mom?

Lulu:(sighs)It's too late. Seymour got away. His men started to attack us so it was hard to stop him

Chelsey: I'm so sorry, I guess we weren't fast enough

Yuna: It's okay sweetie. We still can stop him

Paine: Where's Terri?

Red: Yeah, where is she?

Chelsey: Well...we saw her but she told us she'd catch up. Seymour hurt her, she might be dead!

Simone: It's all our fault, Terri didn't deserve it! Now she's probably dead...

Auron: I wouldn't say that if I were you...

Red: Hey who said that?

(everyone turns around to see Auron and he laughs and Tidus and Yuna walk over to him with surprised looks on their faces)

Tidus: A-AURON?

Yuna: SIR AURON?

Tidus: What the hell are you doing here on Spira?

Auron: I'm here to give you info and give some advice to the angels.

Nina: You mean us right?

Auron: Yes. As you can see there is alot going on...

Tidus: Of course, we know that. We were going to stop Seymour but you're stalling us and he'll probably destroy Spira if we just stay here!

Auron: So, Seymour is causing chaos on Spira again? Hmmm...too bad he's not really the evil one

Chelsey: What? he's not? but how...

Auron: We were shocked to find out that he wasn't, that he was only supposed to find the evil one and help he or she destroy bring his god into the living world. I don't know why he wouldn't be, he's one of the most loyal followers of Gaeltron

Fayth:(appears out of nowhere)We must find the true evil one quickly or the Farplane will be swallowed up by the darkness and all the resting spirits will become shadows!

Tidus: You!

Fayth: Of course it's me Tidus, dream of the fayth. Spira is also like a dream, but more of a song...a song that never ends until time repeats once again...

Simone: Well duh we knew that, can you just get to the point we're wasting time here

Yuna: Simone! mind you manners!

Simone: But Mom!

Auron: I see you're doing a good job as a mother, Yuna. Braska would be proud to see you right now...he would like to meet his granddaughters

Yuna: I'm sure he would. I would like to see him again as well...

Auron: You will, in the end

Sam: When Spira truly becomes an exisiting world right?

Fayth: Correct, but none of this will be possible unless Simone, Nina and Chelsey unlock the goodness in everyone's soul which is the Eternal light within all of us and destroy darkness for good

Auron: Remember, Seymour is not really well real anymore, when he escaped something weird happened to him. Gaeltron gave him weird powers to allow him not to be sent, but then I realized he's not the real Seymour...

Yuna: What? What do you mean not the real Seymour?

Fayth: He is the real Seymour's shadow, his hate, his greed, and his revenge on Yuna. He only wishes to vanish but his emotions are so powerful they're acting as if it were a real being. Not many shadows can do that

Rikku: Hey Yunie, this is just like Eighteen years ago with Shuyin and Vegnagun. The Shuyin we fought wasn't really Shuyin, it was his emotions acting on his own, his shadow

Yuna: Yes, you're right. So we have to defeat Seymour's shadow then, right?

Auron: Right. We have to leave now to look over the Farplane, that's all we know so far. Get rid of Seymour and bring Eternal light to us, Angels...

Simone: Don't worry, we will

Chelsey: So, how did Seymour have a kid then? well how did his shadow have a kid?

Fayth: Mckelly isn't all that alive, she is truly not one of the living, she is the child of a human and a shadow which technically makes her a demon. But not that powerful of a demon so she won't be that big of a problem. Well, good luck on finding the true evil one

Auron: Farewell, we will meet again after this is over (Then Auron and the Fayth dissolve as pyreflies and the scene ends. Another scene starts when you exit the mountain)

Nina: Man, what if like Terri is really dead?

Red: She can't be, she may be old and appear to be weak but she's much stronger than she looks

Chelsey:(sighs)If she is dead it's my fault, I had a chance to help her but I ran off...

Terri: I'm not dead!(everyone looks up at her and she is riding Skywalker and all the other Whistlers are flying around her)

Nina: See, I knew it! I knew she was alive!

Melanie: That is one crazy lady

Nina: Sure is Mel!

(SkyWalker lands and Terri gets off)

Rikku: Are you okay? The girls said you were badly hurt

Terri: The Whistlers cured me. Anyways, I know where Seymour's headed

Tidus: Where is he headed?

Terri: To the tower. It's way on the other side but I'm sure we'll get to him on time. It's only dusk, we'll get there by nightfall. Let's go!

Simone: Seymour is gonna regret messing with us!

(When you're halfway through the woods)

Nina:(walks over beside Osric)Hey, Ozzy? um...

Osric: What is it Nina?

Nina: I know we've been through this but I um...I still have...uh...

Osric: Still have what?

Nina: Hehehehe

Melanie: So, whatcha both like talking about?

Osric: I dunno, Nina was just finishing her sentence

Nina: Oh, just never mind. I'll tell you later

Osric: Uh...okay(walks ahead)

(Nina breathes in and out and looks upset)

Melanie: You still have feelings for him don't you?

Nina: Like duh Mel. But love is like so totally complicated

Melanie: You can say that again...

Nina: You were in love? I know you dated alot of people but I feel different about Osric then about all the other boys I've dated...I just don't know

Melanie: Wow Nina, you in love? well true love? I never really imagined that

Nina: Hey! that's like sooo mean!

Melanie:(giggles)Oh come on Drama queen. Let's go and kick that Seymour guy's fatass!

Nina: Now we're talking Mel!(she and Melanie do that stupid prep giggle and link their arms together while walking like those damn preps do)

(When you reach a certain point in the woods another scene starts)

Terri: We're close. I'm surprised we haven't seen them yet

Paine: Maybe they're here but they're hiding

Brother: Oh great, another surprise attack!

Rikku: Crid-ib Brother!(Shut-up Brother!)

Yuna:(stops walking and looks around)Hmmm...Hey I hear something!

Tidus: What is it, Yuna?

Yuna: I hear voices...coming from over there(points at a direction)

Simone: Are you sure they're voices, Mom?

Yuna: I'm sure of it!

(There's a moment of silence then a bunch of lizard men attack out of nowhere)

Paine: Told ya!

Rikku: Good call Dr.P!

Sam:(grabs Chelsey's hand)Come on!

(Sam and Chelsey run off)

Chelsey: Wait! where are we going?

Sam: To get the Shadow palo back! What do you think?

Chelsey: Just us two? There's no way! we'll get killed!

Sam: Do you want to save Spira?

Chelsey: Yes!

Sam: Well, then let's go!

(When you follow Sam to a save point then go past it and a scene starts)

Chelsey: Phew. I feel like a coward leaving everyone like that

Sam: it's up to us now. I'm not going to let my brother destroy millions of lives again, I won't let it happen!

Chelsey:(twiddles her thumbs)I'm real sorry about your brother and your parents. If only stopping all of this was easy...

Sam: You're a good friend you know? You've always treated me like a person when everyone else treated me like a freak. You made me feel like I belong

Chelsey:(smiles and blushes) You did the same for me. Everyone thought I was weird because I was interested in different things but you treated me like a human being. You made me regain my strength when I was weak

Sam: I did all that?(looks at Chelsey who nods and smiles at him) Wow, I must be amazing...anyways, I always felt close to you, you reminded me of someone I knew a long time ago. You reminded me of Serena, she was just like you. She was like an older sister to me, sometimes I wonder if she came back as you, oh well what am I saying

Chelsey: I'll never forget you. And I'll never forget the moments we spent together. Thank you for everything(leans towards Sam and kisses his cheek)

Sam:(blushes and rubs his cheek) T-Thanks

(Chelsey runs into Sam's arms and hugs him tight with her head against his shoulder)

Sam:(looks surprised then smiles and then spots Seymour with Mckelly, Gawk, and a few Guado and lizard men) Chelsey, whatever you do don't panic!

Seymour: Am I ruining the moment? Does your Mother know about this?

Chelsey: Stay away from us!

Seymour: Oh yes, you're Yuna's youngest daughter Chelsey. And you're also one of the Angels of Eternal light and a fiend speaker too, I see. You'll become quite useful...

Chelsey: How did you know I was a fiend speaker?

Seymour: My god has told me in my dreams. He said Lady Yuna's youngest daughter was a fiend speaker

Chelsey: How would Gaeltron know that? Oh yeah, those two demons Suka and Denya! Gaeltron's messengers!

Seymour: Very clever of you. But, the lives of you and your sisters will be mine!

Sam:(stands in front of Chelsey) No! you won't kill her!

Chelsey: Sam! No!

Seymour: Sam is it? I don't need little brats in my way!

Sam: kill me instead!

Chelsey:(starts to cry) No!

Seymour: So you want to die, so be it(opens his hand and casts a very powerful spell on Sam)

Chelsey: NOOOOOOOO! SAAAAAAM!

(Then Sam falls to the ground)

Chelsey: Why did you do that? why?

Seymour:(grabs Chelsey's hair and she struggles to try and brake free) I have no time for this. I'll come back to steal your life.(flings Chelsey hard next to Sam on the ground and walks off laughing)

(Meanwhile, after the others fought off the lizard men)

Tidus: Man, how many of these guys do we have to fight?

Simone: Beats me, Dad

Yuna: Where's Sam and Chels?

Lulu: I saw them take off. Maybe they went to hide

Yuna: Let's go find them

(When you go through the woods and reach a certain point a scene starts)

Chelsey:(opens her eyes and sits up beside Sam) Sam...Sam...wake up, wake up!(starts to cry) Why did he kill you? He should've killed me(lays her head on him crying) Why did you have to go?

Nina: What's going on? why is Chelsey crying laying next to Sam?

Tidus: Sam's...dead. Poor Chelsey

Yuna: Sam was a good kid, he was very nice to Chelsey, why did he die?(walks over to Chelsey)I'm so sorry, what happened?

Chelsey:(looks at Yuna)Seymour killed him...I couldn't do anything about it. I...

Yuna: Ssssh. It's okay, it's not your fault. I'll perform a sending for him, okay?(kisses Chelsey's forehead)

Chelsey: Okay

(Then Yuna backs a little from Chelsey and starts dancing holding her staff and pyreflies fly all around her from Sam's body while Chelsey watches)

Sam had died, it really was a tragedy for all of us. But worse for Chelsey, Sam was her only friend, now he was gone. Chelsey had told me exactly how the conversation went before he died, how do you think I know what happened? She also told me that she was going to tell Mom and Dad the truth...

(After you follow the group farther in the woods and you walk over to the group when they stop walking)

Yuna:(walks over to Tidus and her friends then sighs)I...I don't know what to do. Chelsey is very upset, she might not ever talk again...

Tidus:(stroke's Yuna's hair)Honey, it's okay. Just give her some time and I'm sure she'll be back to herself again...hopefully

Yuna: I feel this is my fault...(sighs)I don't know why but that's how I feel

Lulu: It's alright to feel that way Yuna...Chelsey is your daughter after all, and you're going to feel guilty if she's upset

Yuna:(nods)I guess you're right Lulu

Rikku: Poor Chels, I feel so sorry for her. She's such a sweet girl and it's terrible that she has to go through this. And it's sad that she's lost her only friend

Paine: Maybe there's a reason Sam died so young, maybe we're supposed to learn something from it...or maybe teach Chelsey something...

Rikku: Uh...Paine, you're not making any sense at all

Tidus: That Seymour is going to pay! Who knows who he'll kill next! First he tries kidnapping our children and now kills Chelsey's friend?(clenches his fist)It's his fault Chelsey's upset...

Yuna:(puts a hand on Tidus's shoulder)Calm down Tidus, anger won't solve anything, I think we should go soon, I would like to wait for Chelsey to feel better but if we wait, Spira will be done for
(When you walk over to Chelsey and talk to her)

Simone: Hey uh...Chelsey?(Chelsey just looks away from her)I'm sorry, really. I wish I could do something

Nina: Yeah, me too. Like Seymour is really starting to piss me off!

Chelsey: Thanks for trying to make me feel better but...(sighs)It's all my fault to begin with

Simone: How is it your fault?

Chelsey:(looks at the sky)It's a long story.(a tear rolls down her cheek)I'm going to tell Mom and Dad the truth. I think it's time

Nina: Are you sure Chels? I mean, what if they don't accept you?

Chelsey: Then I'll leave

Simone: Where?

Chelsey:(looks at Simone and Nina)To somewhere I belong.

(Then you see Chelsey walking towards Yuna and Tidus and Simone and Nina looks nervous. When you walk over to Chelsey, Tidus and Yuna another scene starts)

Chelsey: Uh...Mom, Dad...there's something I need to tell you

Yuna:(she and Tidus turn around)What is it honey?

Tidus: Are you feeling better?

Chelsey: Uh...um...I uh...I should've told you this a long time ago but I think now's the time. I'm not as normal as you think...(then she looks away)I'm a fiend speaker

(everyone gasps and Simone and Nina's friends look worried)

Wakka: A fiend speaker? Are you serious?

(Chelsey nods and looks upset)

Yuna: Why haven't you told us earlier? Do you realize what could've happened?

Tidus: Yeah, what if you called upon fiends by accident and they all started attacking everyone?

Chelsey: I knew I should've told you. Now you think I'm a freak!

Yuna: Chels, honey...it's not that, it's just um...well, do you realize what fiend speakers can do? They are not like other people, they hold the powers of darkness, they can communicate to the most evil forces and creatures alive. They are evil

Chelsey:(crying)I knew it! Now you hate me!

Yuna: Chelsey, we don't hate you! It's just going to be hard to know our daughter is possessed with dark powers!

Chelsey: Fiend speakers aren't all evil! You're made to believe they are! I've learned that nothing is pure evil! not even Shadows, fiends or anything! There's good in everything! even in people like Seymour!

Tidus: Obviously,you're confused. I know you like to care about people but there are those who are pure evil!

Chelsey:(while crying)I knew it was better to tell Sam first, at least he understood me! At least he cared about me! And he and I had alot in common...And now he's gone!

Yuna: Chelsey, we care about you too. But you have to get used to the fact that you have evil in you and there are pure evil beings(sighs)What am I going to do with you?

Chelsey: Obviously you don't understand, you never did! You pretended you cared about me but you liked Simone and Nina more!

Yuna: Chelsey, please stop! Can't we just talk about this? please...

Chelsey: No! I never want to talk to you again...I HATE YOU!

(everyone gasps and Chelsey runs off crying)

Yuna:(opens her arms)Chelsey! Come back!

Chelsey: Leave me alone!

(Then Yuna goes to run after Chelsey, but Tidus pulls her back)

Tidus: Yuna, let her be. She needs time to herself, she's very upset, Let her think about this. If she doesn't come back then we'll go find her

Yuna: I guess you're right(looks ahead)Chelsey...(then she starts to cry)This is all my fault! I'm such a terrible mother! now she hates me! No wonder she never wants to talk to me! I make her feel like an outsider!

(Then Tidus and Yuna hug for awhile)

Terri: Actaully...this is my fault...I'm sorry Yuna

(everyone gasps and looks at Terri)

Yuna:(wipes her tears)How is this your fault?

Terri: I convinced her to tell you. She told me she was a fiend speaker as well. If I never convinced her, you wouldn't be going through this

Yuna:(tries to smile as tears drip down her face)No, I'm glad you convinced her. I would've never known. She must think I don't accept her, but I do...I still love her. She's my baby

Terri: You should go talk to her. I understand that you must feel heartbroken but maybe if you talk to her, she'll probably feel better and maybe even tell you more

Yuna:(nods)I'll try. But, what if she runs off again?

Terri: Keep chasing her until this is all done. She doesn't truly hate you, you know?

Yuna: I'll talk to her. I'll bring her back, I'm not coming back until we work it out together

Tidus: Be careful Yuna

Yuna: Don't worry, I will (she and Tidus kiss then she walks off) I'll be back

(When you walk towards the path where Yuna went on, Simone looks ahead with a worried look on her face and Vidina walks over and puts a hand on her shoulder)

I really felt bad, I've never seen Chelsey so angry or upset in my life. I don't think any of us did. Mom went to talk to her, and Chelsey told me exactly how it went...

(Now you see Chelsey running through the woods crying then she goes to a pond and stands in front of it, staring at her reflection as her tears fall into the pond)

Chelsey: Where do I belong? I'm an outcast! I want Sam to be here! I don't need my family! I don't need anyone!

????: You shouldn't say that...

Chelsey: Huh? who said that?

????: Look in the pond at your reflection

Chelsey: Uh...okay (looks at her reflection and it changes into an image of Serena) Serena? is that you?

Serena: Yes, it is. You shouldn't think that way, your family still cares about you, they don't care how different you are. Just give them a chance, please?

Chelsey: Why should I? get out of my sight!

Serena: You have to forgive them Chels, or the darkness within you will take over and then there's no turning back. Fiend speakers do have evil in them but if they are good the light within them destroys the darkness but if you continue to be very angry at the ones who care about you the darkness will swallow you whole...don't you see Chels? if you don't get rid of that darkness, you are the evil one...

Chelsey: WHAT? NO I CAN'T BE!

Serena: You can still destroy the darkness, but if you let it get to you...you'll destroy the ones you love...and your light will fade...

(Then Serena's image turns back to Chelsey's reflection)

Chelsey: Oh no, now I'm the evil one? How can this be? WHY ME?

(Now you see Yuna standing in the back watching Chelsey)

Yuna: Chelsey?

Chelsey: (thinking) How did she find me? (Yells at Yuna) Go away! I never want to see you again!

Yuna: Look honey, I know you're upset...but you shouldn't get so angry about it you know?

Chelsey: I said Go away! I don't want to talk to you ever again!

Yuna: You really do hate me... (sighs) Hate me all you want, because I'm not leaving until you and I have a talk. Understand? I love you Chelsey. I don't care if you're different, you're still my daughter, you're still my baby. I'll just stand here until you decide to talk to me

Chelsey: Fine, just don't stand here! (starts to think for a bit then has a flashback of her and Yuna spending time together when she was little)

FLASHBACK

Yuna: (sitting with Chelsey on her bed helping her read) Okay Chelsey, read the next line

Chelsey: The cat...w-w...

Yuna: Went

Chelsey: Went to his b-b...

Yuna: Bed

Chelsey: Bed to sleep

Yuna: Very good!

Chelsey: (lays her head on Yuna's lap) Mommy, are we always gonna be together?

Yuna: (giggles) Always (kisses Chelsey's forehead)

Serena: (in Chelsey's thoughts) Remember Chelsey, cherish those moments, love and forgive your family, that is your light, use it to destroy the darkness in you and you won't be able to help Seymour...

(Now back to present, Chelsey opens her heart shaped locket with a picture of her family and smiles then runs over to Yuna and runs into her arms and hugs her while crying)

Chelsey: I'm sorry! I'm sooo sorry Mom!

Yuna: Chelsey...It's not your fault...I'm not mad at you

Chelsey: You should be, I was such a jerk to you. I'm a terrible daughter!

Yuna:(wipes Chelsey's tears while smiling)No you're not, you're a wonderful daughter Chels, you're just very upset about Sam dying. I understand what it's like to lose someone important...

Chelsey: I don't hate you(leans her head against Yuna)I'll never say "I hate you" again!

Yuna:(hugs Chelsey)Honey, it's okay. It's alright. We can still talk about this. I forgive you(looks at Chelsey and smiles)

Chelsey: really?(Yuna nods)Well, I'm sorry that I um...never talked to you and never told you anything. I was nervous

Yuna:(strokes Chelsey's hair)You shouldn't have to be, You can talk to me about anything, Chels. You know that, I've told you enough haven't I?

Chelsey:(nods)Yeah. I'm sorry

Yuna: It's okay Chels. I'm sorry that I put you down like that. I love talking to you, you know? and I'd like to talk to you more. And I've noticed you are quite a talented young-writer, you know how to put words together. I was quite surprised, I'm very proud of you

Chelsey: Thanks, I'm not finished it though...you can read it when I'm done. If you want to...

Yuna: I will. You'd make a wonderful author someday. I'll even read your books, I promise

Chelsey: It's okay if you don't want to, that's fine

Yuna: Why not? I'll support you the whole way. And if you need anything just come to me

Chelsey: Don't worry, I will. I promise

Yuna:(looks at Chelsey and strokes her cheek)You're very pretty, you know that? You'll grow up to be a very beautiful woman, maybe even more beautiful than me(giggles)

Chelsey: Mom! you're very beautiful

Yuna: Aw, that's so kind of you. You know, I was a very quiet girl when I was about your age too. I was very shy around other people, and I wasn't outgoing. I was like you, I played with little kids, and helped out around town. I was like that until I met your father, then everything changed

Chelsey: So, you're alot like me after all!

Yuna: That's right, and you'll always be my baby

Chelsey:(hugs Yuna)Yeah, always

(Yuna kisses Chelsey's cheek then hugs her back and Chelsey and Yuna stand there hugging)

Chelsey: I love you, Mom

Yuna: I love you too

Chelsey: I'm glad you're my Mom

(Yuna smiles and hugs Chelsey tighter then Chelsey looks ahead and you see Tidus standing there)

Tidus: I see you two worked it out

Chelsey: Dad!

(Yuna looks at Tidus and smiles)

Yuna: Yes, we did actually.(walks over to Tidus and Chelsey turns around and looks at the sky)Well, it worked out better than I thought

Tidus: So, is Chelsey going to start talking to you more?

Yuna:(nods)Yes, she will. She's a wonderful girl, I couldn't ask for a better daughter.

Tidus: Yeah(Both he and Yuna look at Chelsey)hey Chels! Why don't you come with us?

Chelsey:(turns around)Huh? Oh...right(walks over to Tidus and Yuna)I'm sorry Dad. About all of this...I didn't mean to yell at Mom

Tidus: Hey, it's okay. As long as you and your mother worked it out I'm fine.(puts his hand on Chelsey's shoulder)Your mother and I forgive you and we'll always love you. Don't feel that we won't accept you if there's something different about you, because it's who you are that matters

Yuna: See, there's nothing to worry about Chels. We'll always be there for you

Tidus: Come on, let's go(he and Yuna start walking)

(Chelsey turns around to look at the night sky again looking at the stars)

Yuna: Come on, Chels!

(Chelsey walks with Yuna and Tidus and Yuna puts her arm around Chelsey's shoulders. Now back at the camp, Simone yawns then she waves as Tidus, Yuna and Chelsey walk towards the camp)

Simone: You guys are back!

Tidus: Yes, we are. So where to?

Terri: I knew Yuna and Chelsey would work it out. On the tower, we're very close. we can stop them there.

Red: That guado bastard is gonna be sorry

Nina: You like so said it Red!

Chelsey: Let's go then!

(Yuna pats Chelsey's back then everyone follows Terri. When you are find the tower a scene starts)

Vidina: I don't see them anywhere

Osric: Maybe they're already inside the tower

Nina: yeah! probably!

(The teens run into the tower, then when you find Seymour a scene starts)

Seymour:(laughs)We've done it! This is the Final task! we have to block the sun and raise Gaeltron from the Underworld!

Simone: Not so fast, Seymour!

(Seymour turns around to see the girls and their friends)

Mckelly: Well, well, if it isn't the Chickenwings!

Nina: Mckelly, Chickenwings was like so yesterday!

Melanie: Like, totally!

Vidina: We're not letting you block the sun! There is no way you're getting away with that!

Seymour: Oh, really? I'd like to see you try to stop me!

Simon: Why don't you give up? It's too late to stop us!

Nick: Yeah, like it is

Charlie: Good going Nick

Nick: Hey! Shut-up!

Mckelly: This is pathetic. What should we do Father?

Seymour: I'm not going to be defeated again! Men! make sure these fools don't ruin my plan!

(A bunch of lizard men and Guado run at the girls and their friends)

AFTER ALL OF THE BATTLES

Simone: Oh no! He's gone!

Yava: Quick! up the stairs!

(the kids run up the stairs)

(When you reach the top of the stairs)

Seymour:(places the Shadow palo in a pedestal and the glyphs in the room start to glow)My lord, give me the power to block out the heavens, block the life source: The sun and bring you into this world!

(After Seymour chants, nothing happens)

Seymour: What the hell? Why isn't it working? I'm the evil one aren't I?

Simone: That's right, Seymour's not the real evil one! like Auron said! But then who is?

Chelsey: I am

(everyone turns to Chelsey surprised)

Vidina: Come on Chelsey, this is no time for jokes, ya?

Chelsey: I'm not, I don't know how I am but that's what Serena told me. The only way Seymour can truly bring darkness into the world is if I lose my light and get swallowed by the darkness in me

Seymour: What? you, Lady Yuna's youngest daughter and one of the Angels of Eternal light? How can that be?

Chelsey: The fayth said one of the Angels of Eternal light had the powers of darkness, he was referring to me. If Spira is to be destroyed it would be because of me but I won't let it happen! The darkness in me isn't going to swallow my soul or destroy my light!

Seymour: If you won't let darkness take over you then I will!

Simone: Chelsey! look out!

(Chelsey turns around then Seymour possesses her by going inside her and Chelsey starts screaming)

Nina: Hey! get out of my sister!

(Then Chelsey stand back up and her eyes are glowing red and she points her daggers at her sisters and her friends)

Simone: Chelsey! snap out of it! please!

(Then Chelsey walks towards the pedestal and touches the Shadow palo then it starts to shine bright and all the glyphs on the walls form as one and a blast shoots out of the tower and starts eclipsing the sun)

Simone: Oh no! We're too late!

(outside of the tower, all of the adults are staring at the sky then around Spira you see everyone looking at the sky terrified)

Seymour:(comes out of Chelsey and she falls down to the ground)Yes! I have done it! Spira is now doomed! Muahahahahahaha

(the top of the tower opens up and you see Seymour standing at the edge)

Seymour: My lord, the sun is eclipsed, rise! My lord! Rise!

(The tower starts to shake violently)

Vidina: We gotta get outta here, now!

(Wehn you run out of the tower)

Yuna: Come on, we have to go!

(Then the ground starts shaking violently)

Nina: Earthquake!

(Now you see in the Underworld you see Gaeltron open his eyes and inside him you see Timothy open his eyes)

Rikku: I wondr how big this Gaeltron thing is

Lulu: We're about to find out

Chelsey:(looks up and look frightened)Oh my gosh! Look!

(You see a gignatic purple bubble rising out of the ground and inside it is Gaeltron)

Seymour: Yes... Yes! Now, release!

(The bubble bursts and Gaeltron opens his wings and roars. Then Seymour bows his head)

Seymour: My lord!

Nina: Whoa! that thing is huge!

Tidus: There is no way we can stop that thing! it's bigger than Sin!

Terri: What a terrible monster...it's hard to believe it once was a boy

Seymour: What do you think of me now, Yuna? you won't be able to stop me! I'll crush your soul and steal the lives of your daughters! I will have my revenge! Muahahahahahahahaha!

(Gaeltron roars then you see the Mcclouds airship flying towards Seymour, Mckelly and their henchmen)
Mckelly: Smell ya later losers!

(Seymour and the others go on the airship and Gaeltron follows it)

Chelsey:(her head starts aching)Ow...my head is hurting really bad!(Now she starts to hear a bunch of voices)Where are all these voices coming from?

Terri: It's Timothy, trying to talk. I think the only way you'll be able to stop Gaeltron is if you talk to him

Simone: H-How? we can't follow them, our airship was destroyed!

Terri: Not for long!

(You see the Whistlers flying in the sky with the Celsius all shiny and fixed)

Yuna: How did they fix it?

Terri: Whistlers do sing after all, remember? They can fix things like that because their singing is enchanted. But sometimes it takes awhile

Tidus: Gaeltron's headed for land! where people are! he'll kill everyone!

(The Celsius lands in front of the group)

Terri: then let's go!

(When you go on the Celsius, it takes off and goes very fast)

Rikku: Hey guys, on the radar I see Gaeltron and he's headed for Silverdome City!

Chelsey: Oh no! Think of all the people who will die! We have to hurry!

Cid: yeehaw! On to Silverdome city!

Simone: And on to save Spira!

(After you walk into the cabin to sleep then go back to bridge, a newscast comes on the screen)

Newsanchor:(above him the headline says: THE APOCALYPSE) Good evening or should I say goodbye. It is the end of the world as we know it and we are being attacked by weird shadow creatures(shows a camera in Luca of people being attacked by Shadows)the sun has been eclipsed and the world of the living will soon be the world of the dead. And it seems that groups of people have gathered in each of the temples in Spira and are praying to Lady Yuna's statue, everyone is wondering when she will return and save us all(shows camera footage of people praying)Well, all I have to say is, whoever planned all of this, way to go you son of a dog. IT'S THE END OF THE WORLD! AAAAAA!!!! WE'RE ALL GOING TO DIE! are we still on? well turn the camera off you idiot!

(The screen turns off)

Tidus: No one's dead yet. I think...what were those weird creatures attacking the people?

Chelsey: Shadows! we have to go faster! or people will die!

Cid: I'm trying my best here you know!!!

Red: Geez don't have to be so grumpy gramps

Terri: I've never been on an airship before, it's really cool I must admit. But right now we need to stop Seymour and Gaeltron!

Rikku: hey! you guys! we have a big one! on the radar!

Simone: Is it Gaeltron? are we close?

Rikku: Oh, sorry. it's just a big fish. Maybe we can cook it and have our last dinner incase we all die

Paine: Rikku, no one cares for fish right now. We need to catch up to Gaeltron!

Nina: You know what I just realized? I've been thinking and maybe I shouldn't become a fashion designer, maybe I should become a pilot!

Osric: Are you serious?

Nina: I've never felt more myself than ever. This adventure really changed me you know? I think it changed all of us! Simone and Mom are getting along, Chelsey is not afraid to be herself and I'm just so excited right now and this was one hell of an adventure!

Osric: Well, I guess that's great to hear(puts a hand on Nina's shoulder and she blushes)

(When you go onto the deck)

Simone:(looks at all of the Whistlers)Thank goodness the Whistlers are here with us!

(Vidina and the others walk onto the deck)

Vidina: Hey uh Simone? This adventure really did change us, ya? Uh...we've all grown up!

Simone: Yeah, we have. And we're about to save the world!

(Vidina and Simone look at each other smiling then put their hands together)

Osric:(whistles)Someone's got it going on!

(everyone laughs)

Vidina: Stop it you guys! it's not what you think!

Yava: Sure it isn't!

(everyone laughs then you see Gaeltron and the Mccloud airship ahead)

Simone: There they are! Speed up!

(In the airship)

Cid: Alright, I'll try then. On to the city!

(Now the Celsius goes faster and the Whistlers are flying with it)

Seymour: Quick, land on the nearest building!

(the Mcclouds airship lands on a building and everyone below looks up and Seymour and Mckelly get out of the ship and stand on the building looking down at everyone)

Seymour:(on a megaphone)Testing, testing 1,2,3, okay. Good evening denizens of Spira! As you see, the end of the world has come and your precious Lady Yuna will never come!

(people start yelling at him going boooooo!)

Seymour: infact, She's stuck on an island! And has no where to go!

MUAHAHAHAHAHAHAHAHAHAHA(everyone starts to panic as he laughs)So, enjoy denizens of Spira your last moments of life! HAHHAHAHAHAHAHAHAHAHA

(then Gaeltron roars and everyone screams)

Yuna:(on a megaphone)Not so fast Seymour!

(everyone look up and cheers)

person: it's Lady Yuna! she's come for us! praise be to us all!

Seymour: Grrrr. How, how could you? Your ship blew up! Lord Gaeltron finish them off!

(Gaeltron roars and starts shooting photons from his wings at the Celsius)

Cid: Alright, here we go!

(The Celsius dodges the photons and Simone and the others jump down and grab the cables and swing down)

Chelsey: Now what?

Simone:(takes out her sword)Fight the shadows!

Yava: Time to kick Shadow @\$#!

(When you save people by battling shadows, you find a megabike and then you ride it. Now you see a scene with Simone riding her megabike and a bunch of shadows are chasing her, she starts shooting them then jumps a bridge and skids)

Simone: Now, I'm cool! Huh?(looks up to see Gaeltron walking through Silverdome city smashing buildings)Oh no!(rides her megabike then a bunch more shadows are charging at her)So, you want me to kill you the hard way. Alright, have it your way!(goes faster towards them then when the megabike hits the shadows Simone flips into the air and lands on the ground)Oh right!

Vidina: Simone!(he and the others run over)Gaeltron is killing everyone! we have to stop him!

Simone:(looks ahead to see more shadows coming out of the ground heading towards the teens then she takes out her sword)We're gonna have to fight our way through!

Nina: That's like alot of shadows!

Osric: Don't worry, if you need help, just call for me!

(Nina nods and smiles then you start to fight)

AFTER ALL THE BATTLES

(Now a scene starts with even more shadows coming out of the ground and Simone starts slashing at them with her sword and her friends are helping out but then Simone gets exhausted)

Simone: There's way too many of them!

(Then you see the adults and Yuna casts holy on a bunch of them while Tidus slashes at them with his sword, then they come over)

Lulu: we have to hide. there's no way we can stop that thing!

Yuna: we tried to help some people hide but I'm not sure if they're safe any longer

Chelsey:(her head starts to hurt again and hears voices)I keep getting this huge headache and hear voices!

Terri: Something must be going on. It must be more than Timothy trying to reach you...

Tidus: We have no time for this! If you want to save Spira then let's go!

Simone: Right!

(When you go into the central part of the city)

Chelsey:(looks at her hands and they start to glow)What's happening to me? Terri! Do you know what's happening?

Terri: I, I don't know

Chelsey:(then pyreflames fly out of her)What's going on? What the heck is wrong with me? The closer I get to Gaeltron the weirder I feel!

Yuna: is Chelsey going to be okay?

Terri: This is very unusual, not even fiend speakers do this...

(Then all of a sudden Chelsey appears as Serena and she looks at Yuna and says something)

Serena: Ah, the future queen of darkness. Well not anymore really...thanks to your daughters that'll never happen

Red: Serena!

Simone: What the hell is Serena doing here?

Serena: Can't you tell? Chelsey and I are one person. Haven't you noticed how we look so much alike? (then Chelsey appears as herself again)

Chelsey: What just happened?

Nina: You appeared as Serena for a bit and she said like you and her are like one person...

Red: Of course, Chelsey, you're the reincarnation of Serena! No wonder when I saw you I thought you were Serena...

Terri: No wonder she's reacting! Timothy and Serena were lovers, and they want to reunite! Maybe if Gaeltron knew Serena was here, he'd stop his rage!

Chelsey: So, I have to talk to him? I'll get killed!

Terri: There is no other way. I'm sure Sam would want you to stop his brother!

Chelsey:(has a flashback of her and Sam laughing together back on Besaid sitting at the beach then she nods)You're right!(starts to run off)

Yuna: Where do you think you're going, young lady?

Nina: You'll get killed Chels!

Chelsey: Maybe, but I'm Serena's reincarnation. I have to do this for her, this is my destiny!

Yuna: Chelsey! Come back!

Simone: No, Mom. Maybe she's right. Maybe that's her destiny

(When you go to Silverdome heights, you see a scene of Chelsey climbing a ladder onto the top of Silverdome heights and then runs to Gaeltron)

Seymour: What does that little girl think she's doing?

Mckelly: Man, she must be crazy! Gaeltron will crush her!

Seymour: My lord! Annihilate this city! Now!

(Gaeltron opens his mouth and gathers energy to shoot a blast and everyone below starts panicking and watches helplessly. Then Chelsey runs in front of him)

Chelsey: NO! STOP!!!(then you hear Serena's voice yell at the same time)Please! don't do it! Think of all the lives you'll destroy!

(you see Timothy inside of Gaeltron looked shocked then Gaeltron stops his attack)

Gaeltron: Ah, you're Chelsey, the young fiend speaker and one of the Angels of Eternal light! I don't care about those lives, I've been summoned here by one of my loyal followers, Seymour Guado, I've been waiting for the Underworld for this moment, i will kill everyone!

Chelsey: But, that won't change anything! I know you're sad over your death and Serena's but you shouldn't take it on millions of innocent lives! I know how you feel...

Gaeltron: you have no idea how I feel! I wanted to change the world! I wanted to make the world a better place, save my people but instead I was killed. why save a bunch of idiots who don't care about me! Who thought I was crazy!

Chelsey: I never exactly fitted in with anyone, not even my family. I was different from everyone, I only had one friend, your brother Samayo

Gaeltron: Samayo? How do you know him? He died at least one million years ago!

Chelsey: No, he was somehow sent through time and I found him on Besaid. He and I have been friends for seven years. But...your so called loyal follower Seymour killed him!

Gaeltron: He what??? No, you're lying! this is all foolishness! I'll finish off this pathetic world and you're not going to stop me!

Chelsey: I'm Serena's reincarnation! She and I are connected! Infact we're all connected! Stop this rage, I'm sure we can find a way to change you back! I know there's good in you, there's good in everyone and everything!

(Then Chelsey appears as Serena to Gaeltron and he starts having flashbacks of him and Serena together)

Gaeltron: Serena? is that you? No, it can't be!

(Then a bunch of Black cobra airships appear and start firing at Gaeltron)

Jasmyn: You're going down! You stupid giant demon thing!

(more and more missles fire at Gaeltron and then he gets angry)

Gaeltron: That's it! I had enough!(rises into the air and gathers energy to aim a blast at the city and Chelsey looks up at him scared and backs away slowly)

(Below on the ground, Yuna holds on to Tidus crying and everyone runs off screaming)

Seymour: yes! that's it my lord! finish this city off!

(Gaeltron shoots an enormous blast at the buildings and the airships and everything falls and Simone, Nina and their friends try to dodge the falling buildings while people get crushed by the buildings or vaporized by the blast. then Chelsey falls off the building unconscious she was on and Yuna screams)

Yuna: CHELSEY!

(then Skywalker catches Chelsey and flies towards the ground. The city is destroyed and Simone falls on her knees with tears)

Simone: No, NO! this isn't happening!

Nina:(wipes her tears)We were too late...

(Skywalker brings Chelsey to the ground and Tidus carries her to Yuna)

Chelsey:(opens her eyes slowly)Dad? what happened?

Tidus: Take a good look

Chelsey:(looks around at the fallen city and at all of the pyreflies flying around and looks upset)He...destroyed it. All of those people...are dead(Tidus places her on the ground and Yuna hugs her crying)

Yuna: Are you okay sweetie?

Chelsey: yeah...where's Seymour and Gaeltron?

Terri: they took off after the city was destroyed. We have to follow them if we want to save Spira (Simone starts to look angry and clenches her fist)

Red: Man, if only Gaeltron had listened to Chelsey...that shadow bastard...

Chelsey: I'm sorry everyone, maybe I wasn't convincing enough, this is my fault

Lulu: No, don't feel that way. You tried your best

Yuna: You were very brave, not even I would've run up to that monster

Simone: Yeah, don't feel bad squirt. You really are growing up fast

Chelsey:(smiles)I guess, and stop calling me squirt!

(everyone laughs)

Tidus: come on, let's go on the airship and catch up to them. If we make it on time

(everyone walks off and Simone takes a deep breath then follows the group)

(When you go on the airship and go to the deck, a scene will start with Simone staring at the ruins of Silverdome city with tears. Then Vidina puts his arms around her and Simone look at him smiling)

I thought for sure Spira was doomed. Gaeltron had destroyed Silverdome city, and was off to destroy somewhere else. luckily, there was something that kept our spirits up...

(When you walk around in the Celsius then Cid and Rikku spot Gaeltron)

Rikku: hey! I see Gaeltron! and the Mcclouds airship!

Cid: They're headed towards Bevelle! it's a matter of time before we can stop them! We'll shoot some missles at Gaeltron so he'll get a little more weakened. He was shot alot by those other ships after all.

(Outside, you see the Celsius aim a bunch of missles at Gaeltron and he starts yelling and turns around)

IN THE MCCLOUD AIRSHIP

Mckelly: Father! they shot Gaeltron! they're back!

Seymour: How? Gaeltron totally annihilated Silverdome city!

Mckelly: I don't know!

(Gaeltron roars and shoots a blast at the Celsius then the Whislters aim all their blasts together at Gaeltron and then it hits him and he is stunned)

Simone: Alright! Go Whistlers! Come on, let's go stop him!

(The girls run onto the deck and jump off and each land on a Whistler, inside the ship you see Yuna looking worried and the girls's friends are cheering)

Yuna: Be careful girls

(When the girls jump off the Whistlers and land on the top of the Bevelle palace, a rainbow path appears leading straight to Gaeltron)

Gaeltron: If you really are Serena's reincarnation, then prove it Chelsey!

Chelsey:(takes out her daggers)Don't worry, I will!

(When you run to the tail)

Simone: Alright! let's go for the tail first!

AFTER BATTLE

(When you go to the legs)

Nina: Oh yeah, it's like time to kick @\$\$ girls!

AFTER BATTLE

(when you go to the arms)

Chelsey: Almost done! no one messes with the Angels of Eternal light!

AFTER BATTLE

(When you go to Gaeltron's upper body)

Gaeltron: So you've made it this far Angels of Eternal light, if you want to save your world, destroy me and free my spirit!(later on near the end of the battle when his HP is low)That's it! I'll crush all of you!

AFTER BATTLE

(The Whistlers aim a blast at Gaeltron and he falls back onto the palace and the girls jump off the rainbow path screaming. then the Whistlers catch them and they look at Gaeltron lying on the ground. Now, in the Celsius, the girls run to the bridge and everyone cheers)

Melanie: I can't believe you guys did that!

Vidina: Yeah, you saved Spira!

(Yuna smiles and walks over to the girls)

Yuna: All three of you have grown so stronger I see. You're all growing so fast before my eyes. You're not little girls anymore. It's time I realize that, I'm very proud of all of you

(the girls giggle and look at each other)

Paine: You have proven yourselves

Wakka: They sure have ya? they're strong like their Mom

IN THE MCCLOUD AIRSHIP

Seymour: NOOOOOO!!! This isn't happening! This is foolish! How did they do that? How could they defeat the king of darkness?!!!

Mckelly: they can do things Father. they are they Angels of Eternal light after all, remember?

Gawk: Yeah, freaky angels!

Seymour:(pulls his sleeve and a glyph on his arm shines then he smiles)he's not dead quite yet

Mckelly: Uh...what do you mean? you clearly saw him fall on top of Bevelle, did you not?

Seymour: When I entered the Underworld twenty years ago, i became one of Gaeltron's followers. And since I have served him well down there, he gave me powers and placed this glyph on my arm claiming me as one of his loyal servants. Not only that, I can combine powers with him! Lady Yuna and her daughters haven't saved Spira yet!(Now he stands on the deck of the airship as it moves closer to Gaeltron, then you see a large glyph shining on the deck and he raises his hands chanting)My lord, I shall bring you back from your death, revive your pain, and I shall combine with you so together, we can destroy the land of the living!

(everyone in the Celsius runs onto the deck then looks as Seymour floating in the air in a purple orb with electric bolts shooting out of it giving energy to Gaeltron)

Yuna: What is he doing?

Chelsey:(gasps)It looks like he's combining with Gaeltron!

Nina: Boy is he desperate!

(Byrn, Dasher and Skywalker hover beside the Celsius talking to Chelsey)

Byrn: He must be one of Gaeltron's loyal followers! We have to destroy that man!

Chelsey: How will we do that?

Dasher: The only way I know is light. But we should fight him head-on then find a way to destroy him with light!

Chelsey: Sounds good, I guess

Yuna: I can't believe I actually trusted Seymour twenty years ago...I was a young fool

Rikku: Hey it's not your fault Yunie. He's just crazy

(Then a huge explosion of light happens and Gaeltron stands up but bigger, and kinda ressembles Seymour)

Seymour:(roars)I am invincible! I am powerful! Nothing can destroy me! NOTHING!

(everyone below screams and runs off as Seymour aims blasts at him)

Chelsey:(has tears and gasps)Oh no! he's attacking Bevelle!

Rikku: Dad! move towards Seymour!

Cid:(on speaker)Alright! don't fall off now!

(the celsius goes towards Seymour and the Whistlers fly towards him as well and shoot blasts at him)

Seymour: Argh! you pathetic creatures piss me off!

(Seymour swipes at the Whistlers then a bunch of warrior monks and Ronso warriors appear. The warrior monks shoot at Seymour with their machina while the Ronso attack the shadows chasing the people)

Seymour: Power! power of evil reigns all!(then he aims a blast at the warrior monks and they run off)

Simone: NOOOO!

Yuna: Seymour! Remember me?(Seymour looks at her than growls)You want revenge against me? then come and get me you gutless idiot!

Seymour: I'll crush your soul Yuna! while you're still alive! after the lives of your daughters are mine! When I have their lives, Gaeltron will have the energy to reign and the sacrifices will be complete!(Then he glares at the Celsius and it stops moving)

Tidus: hey, the Celsius stopped moving! Uh-oh!

(Seymour walks towards the Celsius and the girls prepare themselves to fight)

Simone:(takes out her sword)This is it! This may be the final battle! we might die, but it's better dying for Spira then for nothing

Vidina: Yeah! for Spira!

(Then Simone and Vidina look at each other and nodd, then Seymour starts walking closer)

Simone: You're going down, Seymour!

(when you run to the edge of the deck)

Seymour: You just don't give up! run away while you can little girls!

Simone: giving up isn't in our vocabulary!

Seymour: We'll see about that!

AFTER BATTLE

Seymour: No, No! No! Argh! You stupid brats!(grabs the girls off the Celsius and brings them close to him and the girls scream)

Yuna: GIRLS!

(Then Seymour crushes them really hard and they close their eyes and die then pyreflies fly out of them and Seymour sucks them in and smiles)

Seymour: I have their lives! The sacrifice is complete!

(then you see Serena wake up somewhere and she looks at herself and finds out she was brought back to life then looks up at Seymour and starts shining bright and spreads wings)

Serena: Oh no he took their lives! We'll see about that!(aims a huge blast of light at Seymour and he roars and then explodes into pyreflies, everyone covers their eyes because of the light and Seymour as his normal self falls to the ground screaming)

Mckelly: FATHER!

(Gaeltron's body is destroyed and you see Simone, Nina and Chelsey's bodies are on a building lifeless)

Yuna: No, No!(cries and hugs Tidus)They're gone! gone!

Vidina: And I didn't get a chance to tell Simone how I felt about her...

Serena: They're not quite dead yet...

Yuna:(looks at Serena)You look familiar, who are you?

Serena: I'm Serena. I was reincarnated as your daughter Chelsey, but since she is dead I have been resurrected from the dead. There is a way to bring your daughters back

Tidus: How? how can we bring them back?

Serena: Land on that building where your daughters are and I'll tell you
(the Celsius lands on the building and Yuna runs over to the girls's bodies)

Yuna: So, how can we bring them back?

Serena: I know it's not the best way, but you have to give up your own life. They'll wake up soon and you'll be able to be with them, but...if you bring the light back, they'll be destroyed by it. So, who's willing to give up their life?

(Yuna steps forward)

Yuna: Tidus, draw your sword and strike me

Tidus: What...No!

(then the girls wake up but they're dead)

Nina: Why am I like so cold...and my heart isn't beating...

Chelsey:(looks at Serena)Serena? what are you doing here? what's happened?

Simone: Why do we feel weird?

Serena: You're dead. Seymour stole your lives. And you can't get them back. And when the sun is brought back, you'll vanish because of the light

Simone: No! I don't want to be vaporized!

Yuna: Don't worry. I'm going to sacrifice my life and give it to you

Chelsey: No! Mom!

Rikku: Please, don't do this Yunie!

Tidus: Yuna...then you'll be destroyed by the sun

Yuna: It doesn't matter what my fate is. I want my girls to be alive, I don't want them to be destroyed by the light(she takes a deep breath and walks towards the edge of the building and everyone gasps)

Simone: NO!(runs to Yuna and hugs her tight crying)Please Mom, don't do it! We'll find another way to be alive again!

(then Nina and Chelsey run to Yuna and hug her crying)

Nina: Yeah! We will!

Chelsey: Don't kill yourself Mom! Don't...

Yuna: I have to. I'd do anything for you to live. I love all of you, and I'll always be in your hearts

Nina: Will we see you again?

Yuna: Of course. And if not, at least I got to see you all one last time

Tidus: Yuna, please don't do this...

Yuna: I'm sorry Tidus. Girls, let go.(the girls still hold on to her and shake their heads)Let go, Now! please!(the girls stay silent then let go of her and she turns facing the girls and places her hands on her heart)Goodbye, everyone(Then she falls back and Simone runs after her trying to reach out for her hand but it's too late)

Simone:(crying)MOM!!!!

(everyone below watches Yuna falling and then she hits the ground lying on her back, then she dies)

Nina: She's dead...No!

Chelsey: She killed herself...for us

(then everyone starts crying and Rikku bawls her eyes out and hugs Paine. Then pyreflies fly from Yuna's body and fly towards the girls. The girls breathe in Yuna's pyreflies and they start to shine and their hearts start beating)

Nina: We're alive! Yay!!! I can't believe it!

Chelsey: I know, but what about Mom?

Serena: Let's go down. She'll wake up soon. But remember, if you bring the sun back she'll disappear

Simone: Then let's go see her one last time

(when you go to the ground while Yuna is laying)

Vidina: Hey Kool katt, sorry about your Mom

Simone: It's okay, we'll find a way to bring her back, you'll see

(Then Yuna starts moving and opens her eyes slowly and smiles at everyone)

Yuna: Good, I see it worked. I feel so...cold(stands up and the girls hug her tight)You're all so warm

Simone: And you're cold!

(Yuna smiles then she walks over to Tidus and they hug)

Yuna: Don't mind being married to a dead person, right?

Tidus:(with tears going down his face)No, I don't

Wakka: Hey, don't we have to finish off Seymour? Serena destroyed Gaeltron but Seymour's still here, ya?

Lulu: He fell to the ground, I think somewhere near the palace

Rikku: Let's find him and kick his butt!

(When you go around the palace and then Suka and Denya appear)

Suka: So, you defeated our god? you three really are the Angels of Eternal light

Denya: Tsk. Tsk. Too bad we're gonna have to get rid of them, what a shame

Suka:(looks at Chelsey and Serena)Serena? what are you doing here? Aren't you supposed to be dead?

Serena: Yes, but Seymour stole the souls of Chelsey and her sisters and I was resurrected

Denya: Hmph. You always we're a fool anyways. Come on Suka, let's take down these brats once more!

Suka: I hate humans, they don't know anything about us Demons!

(then Suka and Denya laugh then combine as a big demon, but not even close to being as big as Gaeltron)

Simone: Oh no not again...

Denya: Time for the human squash game!

AFTER BATTLE

Denya: No...we're really going to disappear

Suka: Well, at least we served our god...

Denya: You haven't won yet you damn humans!

(then Suka and Denya start to melt to the ground then pyreflies come out of them, and scene ends. Now when you go to Seymour lying on the ground)

Seymour: What? didn't I kill you brats?

Yuna: You did. I gave them my life.(takes out her staff)Now, to finish one more thing

Seymour: You can't send me fool, I'm not dead anymore.

Yuna: Then I'll do things the hard way

Seymour: Whatever you say, this is the last time we meet, Yuna

AFTER BATTLE

(You see Yuna performing a sending)

Seymour:(looks at the pyreflies flying out of him)No...No! This isn't happening!

Simone: Oh well it's happenin'!

Seymour: You may have defeated my God and I, but there is one more task to do! I will come back!

(Then all of a sudden a glyph glows underneath Simone, Nina and Chelsey and light shines from them and it shoots out at Seymour's body and at all of the shadows all over Spira)

Seymour: NOOOOOOOO!(then he explodes and is completely destroyed)

Terri: The Angels from within have awakened!

(Then Yuna stops sending looking surprised what had happened and falls to her knees)

Simone:(runs with her sisters)Mom!

(when you go to Yuna)

Yuna: It's okay, I'm fine

(the girls help Yuna up and the others walk over and everyone from Bevelle starts cheering and the girls smile)

Mckelly:(standing away from everyone)No, this isn't happening! They killed my father! They shall pay!(runs over to the girls)Hey! you still have to deal with me!

Simone: Give it a rest Mckelly. We won, face it!

Mckelly: Oh no you haven't!

Gawk:(flies onto Mckelly's shoulder)Yeah! you haven't!

Mckelly: You'll pay for defeating my father! Oh, you'll pay!

(then a bunch of warrior monks show up)

monk: Hey! you're Mckelly Guado, the leader of the organization the Mcclouds right?

Mckelly: Uh...yeah, that's me!

monk: You're under arrest! For causing chaos with that stupid organization and being a part of some crazy destroying Spira plan. You'll spend the rest of your life in prison!

(Mckelly and Gawk run off and the warrior monks chase them)

monk: Hey! get back here!

Mckelly: You haven't see the rest of me Simone!!!

(everyone starts cracking up)

Simone: What a loser!

Chelsey: you know I actually feel sorry for her...

Nina+Simone: Nah

Serena: She and Seymour are right. We're not finished yet

Chelsey: What do you mean, Serena?

Serena: The Whistlers sing right? They sing the song of Vaneetra, the beast of light

Yava: Vaneetra? who's that?

Serena: She has been trapped in darkness by the shadow palo for a million years. She created the Whistlers and defeated Gaeltron and trapped him in the Underworld. The only way to bring her back is if one of the Angels of Eternal light sing her song

Vidina: Hey, why don't our bad sing? Simone is one of the Angels of Eternal light, and the lead singer. We just need to practise it and bring Vaneetra back!

Serena:(nods)Spira is a song of my world after all. Like a dream based on it really. Why so you think everyone is connected? We all are connected to someone in my world. only Vaneetra can bring the sun back with the help of the Angels and our worlds will be one. And all the dead will reunite with the living for a while and Yuna might vanish unless we find a way to bring her back to life without sacrifices

Simone: Well, let's practise the song and this will be the greatest performance!

Vidina: Wow, I can't believe we're all connected to someone in Serena's world! that's cool! I've learned alot on this journey!

Simone: Come on! let's go Bevelle's big stage! and bring Vaneetra back!

(When you go to the stage and it's later after Simone and the others practised. Everyone from all over Spira gathered aouns and the concert begins. When it's near the end, Serena and Chelsey put their hands together and light shines from them and you see the Shadow palo back on Glitterenta island explode and Vaneetra bursts out of it and flies towards Bevelle and everyone stares at her)

Nina: Wow, that's sooo cool!

(Then Vaneetra flies towards Simone and tries to attack her)

Simone: Hey! Uh-oh!(dodges the attack)

Vidina: Why is Vaneetra attacking Simone?

(Serena and Chelsey run over)

Serena: She's possesed! you have to fight her in order to get ride of the shadow in her!

(Simone, Nina and Chelsey run towards Vaneetra)

Simone:(takes out her sword)Guys, you ready?

Nina: hell ya!

Chelsey: This is the final battle!

AFTER BATTLE

(The shadow comes out of Vaneetra and the girls start to shine again like before and blasts come out of them and destroy the shadow)

Vaneetra: Thank you for releasing me Angels...I've been trapped for a million years in that Palo. I owe you three alot

Nina:(smiles and tries showing off)Hey, it was nothing

Vaneetra:(spread her wings)I see the Rise of the shadows is over. But you still can bring light back since you all are the Angels of Eternal light. And this world will live in Eternal peace, and the two worlds will be one and Spira will truly exist

Chelsey: Thank you. So why are my sisters and I the Angels of Eternal light?

Vaneetra: Well, more than a million years ago, Three angels guarded my world. They were powerful and ruled in the light, but darkness overcame them and only one managed to escape and became a human...Serena

Serena: Yep, that's why Chelsey's an angel as well because she is the reincarnation of me. And the reason why Suka and Denya seemed familar to Chelsey is because they were human back in my time, they were my childhood friends. And when darkness destroyed my world they were brought back by Gaeltron into the darkness as demons and forgot who they really were

Vaneetra: Yes, that is true. Then the other two angels eventually came back but decided to sleep once they found the perfect souls: Simone and Nina. the daughters of a legendary heroine, and they had no idea that Chelsey would be born as an angel as well.

Simone: Hmmm, that's quite interesting

Vaneetra: Well, the angels within all of you have awoken so help me destroy the darkness for eternity angels, and bring the Eternal light from everyone into the world

(Vaneetra flies in the air singing her song with the Whistlers while the girls spread wings all of a sudden and light shines from them helping Vaneetra get rid of the darkness and everyone gazes at the pyreflies flying around)

Yuna: Wow. That's amazing

(Then all the flowers that were dead become alive and the sun shines down and the darkness is finally gone. Yuna feels weird and looks her hands and notices she is vanishing. Then pyreflies form into people)

Melanie: It's the dead!

(everyone hugs their dead friends and realtives and Timothy appears)

Serena: Timothy!

(Serena and Timothy hug and everyone is excited but Chelsey just smiles and walks off. She stands at the bridge looking at the ocean then you see Sam appear behind her)

Sam: Don't tell me you forgot me already

(Chelsey turns around then smiles and runs to him giggling and hugs him)

Chelsey: Don't worry, I haven't

Sam: I see you guys saved Spira, that's good

Chelsey: So, will you be able to stay?

Sam: I don't know

(Chelsey grabs Sam's hand and they bothh giggle when they run to the others)

Osric: Hey look! Sam's back!

(Timothy and Serena look and Sam and Timothy hug)

Timothy: Wow, you've grown Samayo

Sam: Yes I have. I see you're not Gaeltron anymore

Timothy: nope. thanks to your friends i have been set free. But, we can't stay long. We have to go home

Sam: Home?

Serena: Yes. Now that Vaneetra has been freed and the Angels destroyed the darkness, the dead can go live in our world. Don't worry, you'll see Chelsey again. But in a long time

Chelsey: No, I want him to stay

Serena: I'm sorry but he has to

(Simone and Nina walk over)

Nina: Oh snap! what about Mom?

Simone: Oh right! what are we going to do?

Timothy: You'll have to ask Vaneetra. We can't do anything

Nina:*(walks over to Osrice)*Hey Osrice

Osrice: Yeah?

Nina: I have feelings for you still. I'm sorry I haven't told you sooner, I was nervous

Osrice: That's okay. I still have feelings for you too

Nina:*(smiles and hugs Osrice tight)*So I guess we're together again!

(then Osrice falls over with Nina because she gets too excited. Then Simone looks to see Vidina standing on the balcony and she runs there to see him)

Simone: Hey there

(Vidina turns around)

Vidina: Hey, we did it! we saved Spira! I knew we would!

Simone: Yeah*(watches the pyreflies)*So, what's up?

Vidina: Nothing really, when we go home at least we have some great memories to cherish

Simone: Yeah. This is our story after all. And you've been a great friend, we've had quite an adventure together

Vidina: We sure did*(he and Simone look at each other and smile)*I'll never forget it*(looks at a distance)*

Simone: I-I love you

(Vidina looks at Simone and smiles. They both lean towards each other and kiss. While they kiss pyreflies fly around them and you hear giggling and they stop)

Vidina: Mind your business, ya?

Melanie: See! we knew you two had it going on!

(everyone laughs and Vaneetra hovers in the sky)

Vaneetra: Spira shall live in Eternal peace! and nothing can get rid of that! But we must return home, or the dead will disappear!

(everyone says goodbye to their dead friends and family and Yuna notices she is vanishing)

Tidus: Yuna! no! not yet!

Chelsey: Oh no! how can we keep her here?

Vaneetra: Ah, Lady Yuna. I heard you sacrificed yourself and gave your life to your daughters. You can never be truly human again but you will live as a butterfly, and you will be named guardian of the wind and skies. You'll get to return to your normal form but only when the sun sets.*(places her wing on Yuna and she shines)*

Yuna: Thank you

Vaneetra: Alright! let's go! Farewell everyone!

(A portal appears in the sky and the Whistlers towards it. Vaneetra flies to it too and Sam walks towards it)

Sam: Goodbye, everyone(he smiles at Chelsey then goes into the portal)

Serena: Bye Timothy!

Timothy: Bye Serena!(goes into the portal after Sam)

(Serena and Chelsey smile at each other then put their hands together and become one. Then you see all the dead waving from the portal then it disappears. Now on the other side of the portal, you see the dead in a beautiful paradise and Sam and Timothy spot their parents and hug them with tears of joy.

Now in Spira, Yuna turns into a butterfly and flies around the girls and they giggle)

Nina: Mom! your wings are ticklish!

(then Yuna lands on Tidus's shoulder)

Tidus: hey Honey, you must like flying eh?

(Then Yuna flies off into the horizon)

Simone: Where is Mom going?

Chelsey: She's probably checking out the world. She'll be back don't worry

Nina: She's lucky. Hey, where's Terri?

Rikku: I don't know. I haven't seen her

(then you see Red and Terri smiling at the balcony then they disappear)

Tidus: Come on, let's go home. We'll meet your mother there

(As everyone leaves, you see Yuna soaring in the skies, doing flying tricks then she lands on a flower.

Now it shows later at night, everyone in Besaid is dancing and you see Yuna is her normal form with Tidus dancing and the girls and their friends are fooling around laughing then after a minute, you see everyone asleep and pyreflies are everywhere and Chelsey wakes up when she sees one fly by her)

Chelsey: What the-?(Then she goes outside and follows the pyrefly to the beach and she gazes at the cluster of pyreflies and she hears the voices of all the dead all talking to her from Sam's world)It's Sam's world...It's so beautiful...(then she appears as Serena for a second then she is back to normal then you just see her staring at the beautiful cluster)

The story is complete, we may have lost a few but at least Mom will always be watching over us.

Everyone has found their destiny and Spira is now truly an existing world and peaceful. The future is even better...

8 - epilogue

Chelsey:(sitting under a palm tree on a peaceful sunny day in Besaid writting)Okay, i;m almost done. No, wait...uh...okay how should it end?(Yuna as a butterfly flies to her and lands on her hand)Hey, Mom. Did you enjoy your flight? I bet you did(kisses Yuna and Yuna pulls her hair then she giggles)Mom! Stop! I can't believe it's been two months since we defeated Seymour and Gaeltron. Time sure flies by huh Mom?

(Yuna flies around Chelsey then towards the house)

Tidus: Hey! Chelsey! food's ready! And where's your Mom?

Yuna:(appears behind Tidus as herself)Right here, I flew into the house

Tidus: Oh, good. Let's eat!

Yuna: Come on Chels!

(Tidus and Yuna go into the house)

Chelsey: Hold on! I need to write a good ending for my story!

(Simone and Nina run over)

Simone: Hurry up! Wakka, Lulu, Vidina and everyone else will be here soon!

Nina: Yeah, we're having hot dogs and hamburgers!

Chelsey: Sounds godd. But I need to write an ending!

Nina: Can't you do it later?

Chelsey: No, I need to finish it now! Tell Mom and Dad I'll be there in a minute

Simone: Fine! Come on Nina! let's go!

(Simone and Nina run into the house and Chelsey thinks of an ending for her story)

Chelsey: Perfect! I know the perfect ending! Someday, somewhere in the sky...may we meet again...(she writes it down and closes her book and runs towards the house and opens the door then closes it, You see all of Besaid and it is full of pyreflies and you see kids laughing and playing)

Well, Now you've heard one of the greatest stories ever told. A story that changed our lives. Because this isn't Mom or Dad's story...this is my story

THE END